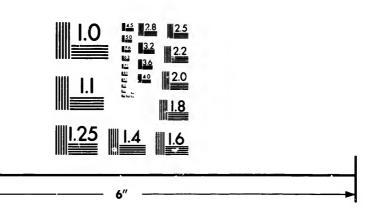


IMAGE EVALUATION TEST TARGET (MT-3)



Photographic Sciences Corporation BET TO THE PERSON NAMED IN COLUMN TO

3 WEST MAIN STREET V'_BSTER, N.Y. 14580 (715) 872-4503

CIHM/ICMH Microfiche Series.

CiHM/ICMH Collection de microfiches.



Canadian Institute for Historical Microreproductions / Institut canadien de microreproductions historiques



(C) 1982

Technical and Bibliographic Notes/Notes techniques et bibliographiques

b ti s o fii s o

	12X	16X	20X		24X		28X	32X
			1					
This i Ce do 10X	cument est film	the reduction ra é au taux de réd X	tio checked below uction indiqué ci-c 18X	// dessous. 22X		26X	30x	4
	Additional comm Commentaires s							
	Blank leaves added during restoration may appear within the text. Whenever possible, these have been omitted from filming/ Il se peut que certaines pages blanches ajoutées lors d'une restauration apparaissent dans le texte, mais, lorsque cela était possible, ces pages n'ont pas été filmées.				slips, tissues, etc., have been refilmed to ensure the best possible image/ Les pages totalement ou partiellement obscurcies par un feuillet d'errata, une pelure, etc., ont été filmées à nouveau de façon à obtenir la meilleure image possible.			
	Tight binding may cause shadows or distortion along interior margin/ Lare liure serrée peut causer de l'ombre ou de la distortion le long de la marge intérieure				Only edition available/ Seule ódition disponible Pages wholly or partially obscured by errata			
	Bound with othe Relié avec d'aut	res documents	ue or distortion		Comprend	du matéri	ary material/ el supplémer	ntaire
	Coloured plates Planches et/ou	and/or illustrati illustrations en c			Quality of Qualité inc		s/ mpression	
	Coloured ink (i.e Encre de couleu	e. other than blu r (i.e. autre que	e or black)/ bleue ou noire)	V	Showthro Transpare	•		
	Coloured maps/ Cartes géograph	niques en couleu	r	$\overline{}$	Pages det Pages dét			
	Cover title miss Le titre de couv	ing/ erture manque		V	Pages disc Pages déc	coloured, s colorées, ta	tained or fox chetées ou p	:ed/ piquées
		and/or laminate aurée et/ou pelli					or laminated, ou pelliculée	
	Covers demage Couverture end				Pages dar Pages end	naged/ lommagée	s	
	Coloured covers Couverture de c				Coloured Pages de			
origi copy which repre	which may allable which may be be the may alter any oduction, or which was all method of	e for filming. Fe pibliographically of the images in th may significa	atures of this unique, ofice ntly change	qu'il de c poin une mod	lui a été pet exempla et de vue bi image repr	ossible de ire qui son bliographic oduite, ou ans la méth	meilleur exer se procurer. It peut-être u que, qui peuv qui peuvent node normale	Les détails niques du /ent modifier exiger une

The copy filmed here has been reproduced thanks to the generosity of:

National Library of Canada

The images appearing here are the best quality possible considering the condition and legibility of the original copy and in keeping with the filming contract specifications.

Original copies in printed paper covers are filmed beginning with the front cover and ending on the last page with a printed or illustrated impression, or the back cover when appropriate. All other original copies are filmed beginning on the first page with a printed or illustrated impression, and ending on the last page with a printed or illustrated impression.

The last recorded frame on each microfiche shall contain the symbol → (meaning "CONTINUED"), or the symbol ▼ (meaning "END"), whichever applies.

Maps, plates, charts, etc., may be filmed at different reduction ratios. Those too large to be entirely included in one exposure are filmed beginning in the upper left hand corner, left to right and top to bottom, as many frames as required. The following diagrams illustrate the method:

L'exemplaire filmé fut reproduit grâca à la générosité de.

Bibliothèque nationale du Canada

Les images suiva tes ont été reproduites avec le plus grand soin, compte tenu de la condition et de la netteté de l'exemplaire filmé, et en conformité avec les conditions du contrat de filmage.

Les exemplaires originaux dont la couverture en papier est imprimée sont filmés en commençant par le premier plat et en terminant suit par la dernière page qui comporte une empreinte d'impression ou d'illustration, soit par le second plat, selon le cas. Tous les autres exemplaires originaux sont filmés en commençant par la première page qui comporte une empreinte d'impression ou d'illustration et en terminant par la dernière page qui comporte une telle empreinte.

Un des symboles suivants apparaîtra sur la dernière image de chaque microfiche, selon le cas: le symbole → signifie "A SUIVRE", le symbole ▼ signifie "FIN".

Les cartes, planches, tableaux, etc., peuvent être filmés à des taux de réduction différents.
Lorsque le document est trop grand pour être reproduit en un seul cliché, il est filmé à partir de l'angle supérieur gauche, de gauche à droite, et de haut en bas, en prenant le nombre d'images nécessaire. Les diagrammes suivants illustrent la méthode.

1	2	3

1	
2	* 1
3	

1	2	3		
4	5	6		

ata

ails du difier

une

nage

elure, å

2X

ACCOUNT

OF THE

European Settlements

IN

AMERICA

IN SIX PARTS.

I. A fhort Hiftory of the Dif- | III. Of the Spanish Settlements, covery of that Part of the IV. Of the Portuguese. World.

II. The Manners and Customs and Danish. of the original Inhabitants. | VI. Of the English.

V. Of the French, Dutch; .

Each PART contains

An accurate Description of the Settlements in it, their Extent, Climate, Productions, Trade, Genius and Disposition of their Inhabitants: the Interests of. the feveral Powers of Europe with respect to those Settlements; and their Political and Commercial Views with regard to each other.

VOL. II.

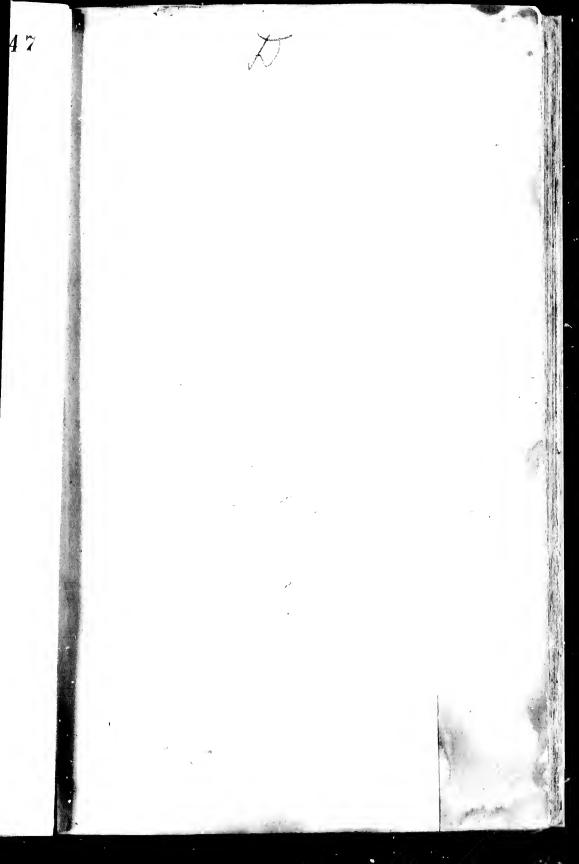
The Second Edition, with IMPROVEMENTS.

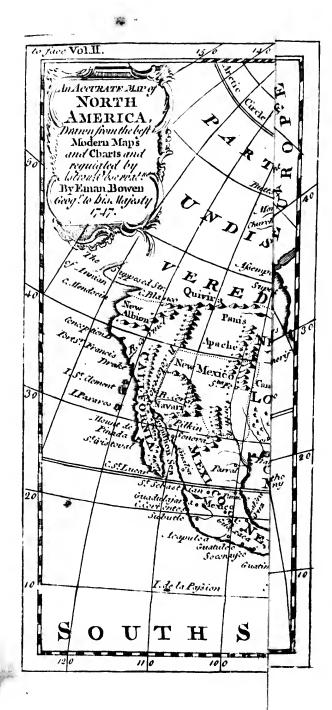
LONDON: Printed for R. and J. Dodskey in Pall-Mall. M DCC LVIII.

A STATE OF THE STA

,

1 HP MANAGET PROJECTION AS





Of the SECOND VOLUME.

PART V.

The French Settlements.

CHAP. I.

THE time in which the French began their West-India settlements. Favoured by cardinal Richlieu. De Poincy governor. The West-India company. page 3

CHAP. II.

The destruction of the colony of St. Christopher's.

The rise of the buccaneers. The cause of their success. The settlement of Hispaniola.

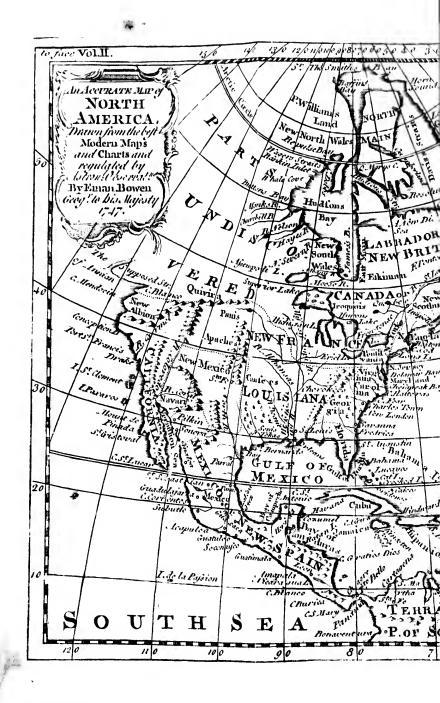
The policy of France. A description of Hispaniola. Its trade. The towns of Cape Francoise and Leogan.

CHAP. III.

A description of Martinico. Of Guardaloupe and other French islands. Their produce. Observations on the mistakes that have been made about their value.

CHAP. IV.

French North America. Description of Canada. Its climate. The fair of Mont-A2 real.





Real. Quebec. The inhabitants of Canada. The river St. Laurence and the great lakes. Cape Breton.

CHAP. V.

Louisiana. The Missisppi. The Ohio. The fountain of youth. The colony of Louisiana.

CHAP. VI.

The French policy with regard to their colonies.

CHAP. VII.

The Dutch settlements. Curassou. The city, its trade. The Spanish counterband. Eufatia. The Danish company. The Danish island of Santa Cruz. The characters of the several European nations as they regard America.

PART VI.

The English Settlements.

CHAP. I.

The division of the English West-Indies. Description of Jamaica. Conquest of that island. 59 C H A P.

CHAP. II.

The settlement of Jamaica. The failure of cacao. The buccaneers. The flourishing state of that island. Its decline in some respects.

CHAP. III.

The products of Jamaica. Piemento. Sugar. Rum. Molasses. Cotton. Ginger. The logwood trade. Disputes about it. The counterband. Slave trade.

CHAP. IV.

Port-Royal. The earthquake 1692. Kingfton. St. Jago de la Vega, or Spanishtown. Disputes about the removal of the feat of government.

CHAP. V.

Barbadoes. Its savage condition at the first planting. The hardships suffered by the planters. The speedy increase of the island. Its great wealth and number of inhabitants. Its decline. Present state of the island. 84

A 3 C H A P.

t lakes. 25

The Louisi-

35

colo-

40

e city, Eu-Danish ers of regard

50

Dethat

59 A P.

CHAP. VI.

St. Christopher, Antegua, Nevis, Montserrat; their present condition and force. 91

CHAP. VII.

Climate of the West-Indies. The rains and winds. Hurricanes. Their prognostics. Produce of the West-Indies. Sugar. The manner of manufacturing it. Planters in the West-Indies. Their way of life and management of their assairs. The negroes. 94

CHAP. VIII.

Observations on the settlement of the West-Indies.

Advantages there for tempers prejudicial at home. Bud tempers not always noxious in every sense.

CHAP. IX.

Observations on taxing the colonies. On an expensive establishment there. Objections answered.

CHAP. X.

State of the negroes in the West-Indies. Danger from them. Methods proposed for remedying

ing these abuses. The necessity of increasing the whites. Use of this regulation in trade. 116

CHAP. XI.

Misery of the negroes. Great waste of them.

Methods of preventing it. Instruction of negroes in religion.

124

CHAP. XII.

Proposal for a sort of enfranchisement of mulattoes and negroes. Danger from the multitude of house negroes.

PART VII.

British North America.

CHAP. I.

A general view of the English dominions in North America. 134

CHAP. II.

First attempts to settle North America. The rise and progress of the puritans. They are persecuted by Laud. Several fly into New England.

CHAP.

lerrat ; 91

Promanin the mage-94

ndies. ial at is in 106

*exan-*I I O

ger dying

CHAP. III.

Difference in religion, divides the colony. Maffachuset. Connecticut. Providence. Spirit of persecution. Persecution of the quakers. Disputes about grace. 146

CHAP. IV.

The witchcraft delusion. Great cruelties. The madness ends in the accusation of the magistrates. Reslections. 155

CHAP. V.

The situation, climate, &c. of New England.

Indian corn described. Cattle of New England.

162

CHAP. VI.

People of New England. Their numbers. Hiftory of the charters of the colonies here, and the forfeiture of some. 167

CHAP. VII.

Boston, its harbour. Trade. Ship-building. Distillery. Foreign trassic. Resections on the scheme of limiting it. Declension of the trade of New England.

CHAP.

CHAP. VIII.

New York, New Jersey, and Pensylvania.

Description of their situation, &c. Short account of their settlement.

184

CHAP. IX:

City of New York. Its flourishing trade. Albany. The Indian trade there. The Iroquois or Six Nations.

CHAP. X.

New Jersey. Its trade; and inhabitants. 194

CHAP. XI.

Account of William Pen. The principles on which he settled the colony. His death. 195

CHAP. XII.

Inhabitants of Pensylvania. Variety of nations and religions there. Pacific principles of the quakers. Reflections on the present state of affairs there.

CHAP. XIII.

Description of Philadelphia. Its trade. Number of people in Pensylvania. Its flourishing condition. Few negroes there. 203
CHAP.

ny. Mafce. Spirit e quakers. 146

ties. The the magi-155

England. Tew Eng-162

rs. Hifere, and 167

huilding. tions on n of the

HAP.

CHAP. XIV.

Situation, &c. of Virginia. Conveniency of its rivers for navigation. Beafts and birds of the country. The opossum. 206

CHAP. XV.

Towns in Virginia few and small. Tobacco, its cultivation. Trade in that and other commodities. People in Virginia. White and black.

CHAP. XVI.

Attempts to settle Virgin. a, three unsuccessful.

Settled at last by lord Delawar. 217

CHAP. XVII.

Virginia holds out against Cromwell, and is reduced. Bacon's rebellion. Its causes. Bacon dies. Peace restored. 222

CHAP. XVIII.

Maryland. The time of settling it. Grant to lord Baltimore. Attempts of king James to deprive him of his jurisdiction. He is deprived of it on the revolution. He is restored. Capital of Maryland. Its trade and inhabitants.

CHAP.

CHAP. XIX.

Attempts of the French to settle Carolina. are beat off by the Spaniards. 233

CHAP. XX.

Carolina is settled by the English. Its constitution. The lords proprietors refign their Made a royal government, and dicharter. vided into two provinces.

CHAP. XXI.

Situation, climate, &c. of Carolina. Its animal and vegetable productions. 24 I

CHAP. XXII.

The commodities of Carolina for export. indigo, pitch and tar. Process in raising and manufacturing these commodities.

C H A P. XXIII.

North Carolina, some account of its settlement. Bad state of that province. Is considerably improved. Chief town. 255

C H A P. XXIV.

An account of Charles-town. Port-Royal. The trade of Carolina. Its wast increase. Articles not sufficiently attended to there. CHAP.

ncy of its birds of 206

acco, its r commoite and 212

iccessful. 217

id is re-Bacon 222

rant to ames to depriestored. l inha-226 A P.

CHAP. XXV.

Settlement of Georgia. Reasons for it. The plan of the settlement defective. Attempts to remedy it. 263

C H A P. XXVI.

Colony new modelled. Faults in the new constitution. Trade of this province. 269

CHAP. XXVII.

Nova Scotia, the time and reasons of its settlement. French there. Climate and soil. Annapolis, Halifax and Lunenburgh. 273

CHAP. XXVIII.

The island of Newfoundland. The fishery there.
The Bermudas. Their settlement and trade.
The Bahamas. 280

CHAP. XXIX.

Hudson's Bay. Attempts for the discovery of a North-West passage. The Hudson's Bay company. Thoughts upon its trade. Climate and soil of the countries there. Conclusion. 285

CHAP. XXX.

The royal, proprietary, and charter governments. Laws of the colonies. Paper currency. Abuses in it. Another sort of money proposed. it. The tempts to 263

w consti-269

s fettlel. An-273

there. trade.

ery of a ay comate and 285

govern-Paper fort of 296 AN

ACCOUNT

OF THE

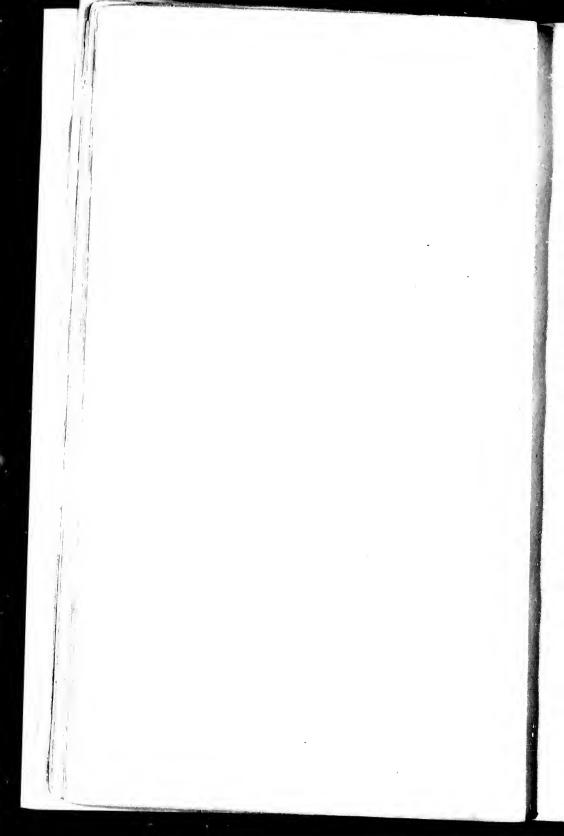
EUROPEAN SETTLEMENTS

IN

AMERICA.

VOL. II.

 \mathbf{B}



PART V.

The French Settlements.

CHAP. I.

The time in which the French began their West-India settlements. Favoured by cardinal Richlieu. De Poincy governor. The West-India company.



HE French were amongst the last nations who made settlements in the West-Indies; but they made ample amends by the vigour with which they purfued them, and by that chain

of judicious and admirable measures which they used in drawing from them every advantage, which the nature of the climate would yield; and in contending against the difficulties which it threw in their way.

B 2 The

The civil wars, which divided and harraffed that kingdom, from the death of Henry the second, with very little interruption, until the majority of Lewis the fourteenth, withdrew the attention of both prince and people from their commercial interests to those of parties in religion and government. The politics of the house of Valois, though France perhaps was never governed by princes of fo ingenious and refined a turn, were wholly of the Machiavillian kind. They tended to distract, to unsettle, to try dangerous schemes, and to raise storms only to display a skill in pilotage. The parties then in France folely contended, what power could be given to or taken from the king, without confidering what could make their country a great kingdom. Therefore, which way foever the ballance inclined, whether to the king or to the nobles, to the catholics or to the protestants, it was pretty indifferent to the real happiness of that nation. The parties only gamed out of a common stock. Neither could be enriched. But their dissensions made all of them poor and weak. The time of cardinal Richlieu must be confidered as the true æra of French policy. This great man pacifying all at home, exalting the royal authority upon the ruins of the power of the nobility, and modelling that great system of general policy in external affairs, which has raised France to such a pitch

enry the until the vithdrew ple from f parties politics nce perof fo inhclly of nded to chemes, a skill France be given ut cony a great ever the or to the testants. piness of out of a ed. But bor and must be policy. ne, ex-

harrassed

pitch of greatness; amongst so many, and fuch extensive cares, did not forget those of commerce, and what ferves most effectually to support commerce, colonies, and establishments abroad. But the circumstances of the time, and his genius that embraced fo many objects, did not leave him leifure to perfect what he began. It was referred for that great, wife, and honest minister Colbert, one of the ablest that ever served any prince, or honoured any country, to bring that plan to perfection, to carry it in a great measure into execution, and to leave things in fuch order, that it was not difficult, when favourable circumstances offered, to make France one of the first trading powers in Europe, and her colonies the most powerful, their nature considered, of any in America.

So early as the reign of Francis I. the French attempted an establishment in North-America; but it was not until the year 1625, that they made their first settlement in the West-Indies. This was upon St. Christopher, one of the Caribee islands. A remarkable circumstance attended it; the English took possession of the island the same day. this settlement had not long life on either side. The Spaniards had reason to dread the establishment of such powers in their neighbourhood; and they envied the French and English those advantages it was foreseen they would draw from countries from which they

uins of

ng that

external

fuch a

pitch

had themselves no benefit, and which they

claimed only to keep them defarts.

They affaulted these new colonies, and drove them out of the island. The English colony soon returned, and possessed themselves of the largest and most sertile quarter, before the French could collect themselves; who, finding the English already occupied the best part, lest a small colony on the other. But their chief, and the most adventurous of their inhabitants, went in search of a new settlement; when, after various fortune, and after combating the difficulties which an uncultivated country and some indiscretions of their own had caused them, they made a considerable settlement in the islands of Martinico and Guardaloupe.

Cardinal Richlieu faw very early into the advantages which might arise from these settlements, if prudently managed; and he thought the most prudent management both for securing and extending them, confisted in but one article; which was, to put the government into proper hands. With that view he made choice of Monsieur de Poincy, a knight of Malta; who was fent thither with the title of governor and lieutenant-general of the isles of America, and a very ample commission. No person could be better fitted to rectify the disorders that naturally must arise in every new fettlement, and to put things in a right channel for the time to come. Of a good family;

es, and
English
Emselves
before
who,
the best
r. But
of their
v settlend after
uncultiof their

nto the fettlehought for sein but

onfider-

artinico

ew he knight le title he isles isles

fy the every right

colony.

good aily ;

family; of an unblemished reputation for probity; of great reading; of much and various knowledge of life; and of a genius as variously exercised. He was a master in mechanical learning; in which he excelled not more to his own honour, than to the benefit of the colonies which had the happiness to be committed to his care. He it was that first taught them the method of cultivating the fugar came, and preparing the fugar. improved the methods which were used in the Brazils for this purpose, both with regard to the mills and the furnaces; and having given a direction to their industry, he gave it all the encouragement he could, by supporting those who raised their own substance, by the means which advanced the colony; whilst he kept a watchful eye, and a severe hand upon all, who were for making hafty fortunes, without adding to the public stock. made admirable regulations for the speedy and impartial administration of justice; and knowing that all order must depend for its bleffing above, and its effect here upon an attention to religion, he ordered a proper number of churches to be built in all the islands under his care, and settled priests in them, with a competent, but not a superfluous provision; but he did not think monasteries and monks fo compatible with a new

B 4

Under

These islands, however, were unhappily under the superintendance of an exclusive company, which, in spite of all that could otherwise be done, especially after the death of Richlieu, so neglected, or mismanaged their affairs, that they were obliged to sell a part of the fettlements; and they left the rest hardly worth purchasing. But the government at length bought up the islands which they had alienated, and rescued the others out of their hands. The trade under proper regulations was laid open, yet protected under the wings of their great India company. These regulations took place about 1680, and the benefits of this arrangement were great, and Exclusive companies may foon apparent. probably be useful to nourish an infant trade. They may be useful too for a very distant one, where the market is to be nicely managed, and where it is under the dominion of foreign and barbarous princes. But where the trade is between different parts of the dominions of happily xclusive to could edeath anaged of ell a che rest governwhich eers out per re-

may trade. trade, aged, oreign trade

the

under

Thefe

nd the

the same rince, under the protection of his laws, carried on by his own subjects, and with goods wrought in his own country, such companies must be equally absurd in their nature, and ruinous in their consequences to the trade.

CHAP. II.

The destruction of the colony of St. Christopher's.

The rise of the buccaneers. The cause of their success. The settlement of Hispaniola.

The policy of France. A description of Hispaniola. Its trade. The towns of Cape Francoise and Leogan.

FTER the Spaniards had ruined the first colony at St. Christopher's, they brought upon themselves by this act, a very heavy revenge for the injustice of it. Their example at the same time made it apparent, how much better it is to let a bold and adventurous people settle in some place where they can do but little mischief, and to suffer their spirit to evaporate in peaceful occupations, rather than to keep it up by difficulties, unable to quell it, but which may force it to take another and more dangerous turn.

Several of the French inhabitants, who were expelled from St. Christopher's, being reduced to great indigence, began to think of desperate

courles.

courses. They betook themselves to piracy; and uniting with some vagrant English, Dutch, and other outcasts of all nations, but resolute fellows, and not destitute of men of capacity amongst them, they began a piratical war upon the Spaniards. At first they satisfied themselves with taking their ships and destroying their trade; which they did effectually; but foon encouraged and strengthened by this fuccess, they landed upon the continent of New-Spain and Terra Firma, burning and plundering the open country. Their boldness and number increasing with their fuccess, they affaulted and took some of their strongest fortresses and most opulent towns. They took Portobello, Campeachy, Maracaibo, Gibraltar, and the fortress of Chagra; they even took the city of Panama by storm, and burned it, after defeating an army which came to beat them off. In all which places, and in the others which they had taken, they gained an incredible booty, and committed the most unheard-of cruelties. Another party of these pirates passed the streights of Magellan, and entering into the South-Sea, turned the whole coast of Peru, Chili, and the East of Mexico, into one scene of desolation; every where attended with success, because every where acting with a bravery and conduct, that in any other cause had merited the highest honours.

oiracy; and , Dutch, it resolute of capacity itical war y fatisfied and ded effectungthened he conti-, burning Their ith their of their t towns. Maracai-Chagra; y storm, y which places, n, they nmitted er party Magelturned nd the blation ; because d conted the

Itis not a little surprising, at first view, that all the great things which were done in this new world, were either done by actual pirates, as these men were, or by private adventurers, but one degree better authorized, and nothing better supported; whose own courage and skill were to be at once their commission, their magazines, and their treasury; being obliged to find the resources of the war, in the war itself. When the most numerous and the best provided armaments have shamefully failed, and failed in those very places, where the adventurers had shewn them such a glorious example of fuccess. But the cause is not so hard to be affigued. None but men of great enterprise and bravery, conceive those expeditions of themselves. Unsupported, but at the same time unchecked by the higher powers, they were under the necessity of turning to every fide, and of exerting every faculty. But then they had nothing to hinder this exertion. Their first attempts were generally low, and therefore they were prosperous. They did not lead great armies to be subsisted with great difficulty, and to be discouraged and wasted by the hardships of the climate; but they habituated themselves to hardships by degrees: they were encouraged by smaller successes; and having nothing to expect from their power and numbers, they made amends by their vigilance, their activity, and their courage.

courage. These are causes adequate to the effect; indeed adequate to any effect. Whereas in the regular way, a general of the first note and reputation has rarely been fent into America; the fervice feemed beneath him; and they that were tolerably expert at fecond and third parts, (worse than the absolutely inexperienced for the very first, where the scene is new,) were fent by court favour and in-What armaments from England, trigue. Holland, and France, have been fent in different times to America, whose remains returned without honour or advantage, too clear, and perhaps too invidious a topic to be greatly infifted upon.

The pirates, whom we called buccaneers improperly, the French denominated flibustiers, from the Dutch flyboats, in which they made their first expeditions. The buccaneers are no more than persons who hunt wild cattle in America for their hides and tallow. Some of these joined the flibustiers in their first expeditions; and from them we named the whole body, buccaneers. These people brought their prizes and plunder frequently into Jamaica, by which they enriched that island extremely. Others, finding that the Spaniards were very weak in Hispaniola, and that they had in a manner deferted a confiderable part of the island, made it a place of rendezvous. They who hunted cattle faw

ate to the . Wheref the first fent into ath him; at second olutely inthe scene and inEngland, sent in remains stage, is a topic

EAN

ccaneers d flibusich they ccaneers nt wild I tallow. in their named people quently ed that hat the la, and onfidelace of le faw

the hideous desarts left by the Spanish tyranny, a proper place for exercifing their profesfion. To these two sorts of people were soon added a third; who were some of the French in the Leffer Antilles, who finding how much might be made by supplying a fort of people who expended largely, and were not very exact in their bargains, and perceiving that no part of America afforded a better foil, passed over to this island, and exercised here their business of planters and merchants. These three sorts of people mutually in want of each other, lived in very good harmony. The Spaniards dislodged them several times; but they still returned, and with new strength; fo that it was with difficulty, and after a long dispute, that the Spaniards were able to retain one part of the island.

The court of France saw the progress of these people silently. Whenever complaints were made, they disavowed their proceedings; resolved not to break measures with Spain for the sake of an object, which they were not sure they could hold, and the advantages of which were yet doubtful; but when they found the French in Hispaniola numerous, strong, and wealthy, they owned them as subjects, sent them a governor and regular forces to keep them so, and to defend them in what they had done: the old method of piracy was still connived at, whilst the trade

of skins increased, and the plantations extend-At last the French obtained a legal right by the cession, which the Spaniards made them of the North-West part of the island by the treaty of Ryswick, in 1607; the best and most fertile part of the best and most fertile island in the West-Indies, and perhaps in the world; that which was the first settled, and the whole of which is upwards of four hundred miles long, and one hundred and forty broad. This is the principal fettlement of the French in the West-Indies, and indeed in all America. The country is mixed; pretty mountainous in some parts, but many of these mountains are fertile, and covered with beautiful woods. Others, which are barren and rocky, anciently had mines of gold; they are not worked now, though it is judged they not only contain those of gold, but mines of filver, copper, and iron. But the French think, and I believe, with reason, that their labour is better bestowed on the culture of the plains for these rich commodities, which vend so well in Europe, than in the pursuit of mines, really more precarious in their profits, and which yield a wealth after all, of a less useful kind.

This country has likewise prodigiously fine plains, of a vast extent, and extreme fertility; either covered with noble and beautiful forests of timber and fruit-trees, excellent in their kinds, or pastured by vast numbers of horned cattle, sheep, and hogs. The air in Hispaniola

EAN ns extendd a legal Spaniards art of the 1697; the and most d perhaps rst settled, ds of four dred and settlement ind indeed mixed: but many covered h are barof gold; is judged but mines e French that their ire of the th vend fo of mines. hd which kind. ully fine fertility; ul forests

in their

horned

spaniola

is

is of the most healthy in the West-Indies. The country is admirably watered with rivulets as well as navigable rivers. It is no wonder therefore, that this active and induftrious nation, in possession of so excellent and extensive a country, has reaped from it prodigious advantages. They were the better enabled to do this, from the reat encouragement their settlements met with in France: and from the wife regulations which were made concerning them. These we shall confider in their place. But it is certain they reckoned in the year 1726, that on this island they had no less than one hundred thousand negroes, and thirty thousand whites; that they made fixty thousand hogsheads of fugar of five hundred weight each; that the indigo was half as much in value as the fugar; that they exported large quantities of cotton, and that they had fent besides to France cacao and ginger in tolerable plenty. that time they have raifed coffee here to a very great amount. And not this article only, but every other branch of their commercial products has increased to a degree truly astonishing fince that period. Towards the conclusion of the late war a Spanish writer of great judgment and well informed, reckons the produce of the plantations near Cape St. Francoise, the capital of French Hispaniola, and which were exported from that fingle town, at 30,000 tons in fugar, indigo, tobacco, and coffee. This

This export at the lowest possible calculation cannot be of less value than 600,000 pounds sterling. If to this we add the exports of the two confiderable ports of Leogane and Pet't Guaves, and the other inferior ones, which certainly do not fend out less than the capital; on this low estimation, we find the exported produce of this island to be worth 1200,000l. annually; which great as it is, is certainly under-rated. But there is another branch of their trade if possible more advantageous to the mother country, the counterband which they carry on with the Spaniards, wholly in the manufactures of France, and for which they receive their returns in filver. abovementioned author from the most authentic information tells us, that this trade returns annually to France no less than two millions of dollars. This progress of the French colonies, and their flourishing state after a war in which they suffered greatly, I have displayed, in order to explode a notion which prevails with many; that by diffreffing the French in time of war it is in our power entirely to destroy their commerce; but this notion, if it should prevail generally, may mislead us greatly to our disadvantage.

Nations like France and England, full of people of spirit, and of industry, easily recover all the losses of war. The trade of France was in a deplorable condition at the treaty of Utrecht. She had not then sive hundred vessels of all

forts

calculation oo pounds orts of the and Pett es, which he capital; e exported 200,0001. certainly branch of ageous to nd which wholly in for which er. The most authis trade than two s of the ing state greatly, I a notion listressing ur power but this ly, may

of people er all the was in a Utrecht. ils of all forts forts in the world. At the beginning of the last war, but thirty years after, they had eighteen hundred. Their losses in that war were very great; and yet their losses in this shew, that in a very little time they have more than repaired them. Wherever the vital principle subsists in full vigour, wounds are foon healed. Diforders themselves are a species of remedies; and every new loss not only shews how it may be repaired, but by the vigour it inspires, makes new advantages known. Such losses renew the spirit of industry and enterprise; they reduce things to their first principles; they keep alive motion, and make the appetites of traders sharp and keen. While the spirit of trade subsists, trade itself can never be destroyed. This is the reason that amidst their continual wars, and the losses all the nations of Europe suffer from each other, they are almost all thriving. And if I may indulge a conjecture, it may be one among feveral of the causes that have reduced the trade of Holland, that fince the treaty of Utrecht, now above forty years, they have had no They may, during the quarrels of other powers, appear to have derived great advantages from their neutrality. But are they not with all this declining fast? And is not this country, which grew to be a nation, and to be a powerful trading and rich nation, Vol. II.

in the midst of the most bloody and expensive wars, now losing its trade, its riches, and its power, and almost ceasing to be a nation, in the midst of a profound peace of upwards of forty years. We must not forget, what the great Colbert faid of his country, and which we have experienced to be true, that the industry of the French if permitted would turn the very rocks into gold. We must not therefore place our dependence for keeping ourselves on a par of power with France, won the prejudice which we can do its trade in time of war, but upon the vigour, economy, and wisdom of the measures which we take to fecure and advance our own, both in war and in peace.

The largest town in the French part of Hispaniola is Cape Francoise, which is situated on the Northern part of the island upon a very sine harbour. It is well built, and contains about eight thousand inhabitants, blacks and whites. But the this be the largest town, Leogane on the Western side, a good port too, and a place of considerable trade, is the seat of government, which here resides in the hands of a governor and the intendant, who are mutually a check upon each other. There are besides two other towns, considerable for their trade, Petit Guaves on the West end of the island, and Port Louis on

the South-West part.

CHAP.

CHAP. III.

A description of Martinico. Of Guardaloupe and other French islands. Their produce. Observations on the mistakes that have been made about their value.

Artinico is the next island in importance, which the French possess in America. It is one of the Caribbees or Windward islands, and the principal of them; about fixty miles in length, and at a medium about half as much in breadth. It is forty leagues to the North-West of Barbadoes. It has pretty high hills, especially in the inland parts. From those hills are poured out upon every side a number of agreeable and useful rivulets, which adorn and fructify this island in a high degree. The bays and harbours are numerous, fafe and commodious; and fo well fortified, that we have always failed in our attempts upon this place. The foil is fruitful enough, abounding in the fame things which our islands in that part of the world produce, and upon which I shall the less insist on that account. Sugar is here, as it is in all the islands, the principal commodity, and great quantities are here made. Their export cannot be less than fixty or feventy thousand hogsheads, of five or fix hundred weight, annually, and this

HAP.

AN

expenfive es, and its

nation, in

owards of

what the

nd which at the in-

ould turn must not

· keeping

nce, apon de in time

omy, and

e take to

ı in war

h part of

ı is fitu-

and upon

uilt, and

habitants, he largest

, a good

trade, is e resides

e inten-

bon each

er towns,

uaves on Loüis on

cer-

certainly is no extravagant estimation. Indigo, cotton, piemento or allspice, ginger, and aloes, are raised here; and coffee in great abundance; but to what value I cannot exactly say. Martinico is the residence of the governor of the French islands in these seas.

Guardaloupe is the largest of all the Caribbees, and in that division called the Leeward islands. It is almost cut in two by a deep gulph that closes the fides of a narrow isthmus, which connects the two peninfulas that compose this island. It is upwards of fixty miles long, and about the same breadth. Its foil is not inferior to that of Martinico; it is equally cultivated; and it is fortified with equal strength; its produce is the same with that of Martinico; its export of sugar is as great, besides indigo, cotton, and those other commodities, which are produced in all the islands of that part of America called the West-Indies.

The rest of the French islands in those seas are Desiada, St. Bartholomew, and Marigalante; all of them inconsiderable in comparison of those which we have mentioned. They do not all together produce above seven or eight thousand hogsheads of sugar. As for the island of St. Vincent, it is in the possession of the native Americans, and of runaway negroes from the rest of the Caribbees. The French maintain them in this possession. Santa Lucia,

it abundkactly fay. overnor of

he Carib-Leeward eep gulph is, which compose iles long, soil is not equally th equal with that as great, her comne islands

in those nd Mariin comntioned. ve seven

As for offession unaways. The n. Santa

Lucia,

SETTLEMENTS in AMERICA.

Lucia, or as it is often called, Sant Alouzie, of which the French are themselves in possesfion, and have fettled, contrary to the faith of treaties, it is impossible to fay any thing of its produce; it has been fo newly planted, that it cannot as yet yield a great deal, and it is, even in our present circumstances, much our fault if it ever yields a great deal to France. These islands, besides their staple commodities, fend home rocou, and brazil wood, in confiderable quantities for the use of dyers, cassia for the druggists, and rosewood for joiners. The French have a settlement upon an island on the coast of Terra Firma in the province of Guiana, which they call Caen; and they claim besides a considerable part of the adjacent continent, but they have not much extended their fettlements that way. The island is excessively unhealthy, though not so bad as formerly. The French here raise the same commodities which they have from the Caribbee islands, and in no inconsiderable quantity.

In estimating the produce of these islands, it is not in my power to be very exact. I have made the best enquiries I could, and principally took care not to exaggerate. I have, indeed, made the produce of the Caribbee islands very much greater than the ingenious collector of Harris's voyages; but then I am the less fearful of differing from him, as

C 3

he

On the whole, from the best informations I can get, the French at present greatly exceed our islands in the quantity of sugars which they produce; and it is as certain, that they are far less on the decline in that trade than we are, at least as things stood before the war; that they cultivate great quantities of indigo; a trade which our colonies in the West-Indies have entirely

-1N lf, and not his ufual " That nhabitants re fugars, pe a little ces more ls, except oming to llands, he s of fugar, for the island of antity of ipe, and ther pro-1730, at upwards, ust thereake, ex-, which masterly

nations I y exceed s which they are n we are, var; that o; a trade ies have entirely

entirely lost; that within these few years they have sent to Europe abundance of coffee, which our islands have not sufficient encouragement to raise; and that upon the whole, we have the greatest reason to be jealous of France in that part of the world. What advantages they derive from the noble island of Hispaniola we have seen. What must they do, if they come to posses the whole of that island, which in the cutting and fhuffling of a treaty of peace is no way impossible? We shall then change the indolent Spaniard for the neighbourhood of the lively, vigilant, and enterprifing French. And what a rivalry in peace, and what a danger in war that neighbourhood is even now, and much more will probably be, is but too apparent. Jamaica is near it; and for so valuable a possesfion in so dangerous a situation, perhaps not so well defended. If besides this, the French should retain the islands of St. Vincent, St. Lucia, and Tobago, though they should only turn them into plantations for fire wood, lumber, and provisions, as in such a case it would feem most adviseable to do with some of them at least, what an advantage to their colonies! what an annoyance to ours! which they in a manner furround, and can in a fort hold besieged by the private armaments they may from thence fit out.

These last mentioned islands were lest neutral at the last peace; or in other words, they were

C 4

24 An ACCOUNT of the EUROPEAN

left at the extinction of the old, in just the order proper for kindling a new flame (though fuch a defign, I am convinced, was far from the intentions of one of the parties) and in all respects as if things were expressly ordered for that very purpose. Indeed nothing can be attended with worse consequences than these political after-reckonings, which the party who has the advantage at making the peace, never finds it his account to fettle or adjust; but there they lie, full of matter of litigation; full of idle occasions for formal business; full of strife, and of ill blood; and, when a proper time occurs, of bloody and expensive wars. It were better, at any rate, all at once to know what we are to depend upon; the best or the worst we have to expect. If on the conclusion of a peace, things should take for us such an unfortunate turn, we have still great resources in the territories we posles. Jamaica is nothing like fully cultivated. The Bahamas, our undisputed right, where it is highly probable fugars might be cultivated to advantage, rehain at present utterly neglected, as if unworthy of all notice, though they are many in number, large in extent, fruitful in their foil, fituated in a very happy climate, and are in a manner the keys of the West-India navi-But we shall pass by all reflections on this subject for the present, to look at the possessions and claims of France upon the

the order gh fuch a m the in-Il respects for that e attendese poliarty who ce, never ust; but on: full ; full of a proper wars. It to know ft or the nclusion fuch an esources a is nonas, our

brobable

ge, re-

if une many

in their and are

ia navi₌

ections

look at

upon the

SETTLEMENTS in AMERICA. 25 the continent, which, if they were as well cultivated as they are fruitful and extensive, or as convenient objects of the French industry as their islands, they would, I make no doubt, be at least as advantageous to the trade, and add as much to the wealth and power of that flourishing kingdom.

CHAP. IV.

French North America. Description of Canada. Its climate. The fair of Mont-Real. Quebec. The inhabitants of Canada. The river St. Laurence and the great lakes. Cape Breton.

North America consist of an immense inland country, communicating with the sea by the mouths of two great rivers; both of difficult and dangerous navigation at the entrance; and one of which is quite frozen for almost half the year, and covered with thick exhalations and fogs for the greater part of the rest. They divide this vast country, which has our colonies on the East and North-East; the Spanish on the South-West and South-East; and to the Westward that unknown tract of land which stretches to the South-Sea; into two great provinces; the Northern of which they call Canada, and the

26 An ACCOUNT of the EUROPEAN

Southern Louisiana. But how far the bounds of these countries, extended to dimensions almost as great as all Europe, by the ambition of France, ought to be contracted by the rights of other powers, I shall not undertake to determine; as after all, such questions must be decided in a manner altogether different

from any thing that can be faid here.

Canada, which borders upon our provinces of Nova-Scotia, New-England, and New-York, is of a climate not altogether different from theirs; but as it is much further from the sea, and more Northerly than a great part of those provinces, it has a much feverer winter; though the air is generally The foil is various; mostly barren; but the French have settlements where the land is equal in goodness to that in any of our colonies, and wants nothing but a better convenience of market to make it equally advantageous to the proprietors. It yields Indian corn very well in most parts, and very fine All forts of garden stuff wheat in fome. which grows in Europe flourishes here. But they raise no staple commodity to answer their demands upon Old France; their trade with the Indians produces all their returns for that market. They are the furs of the beaver principally, and those of foxes and racoons, with deer-skins, and all the branches of the peltry. These, with what corn and lumber they send

27

ftions must er different

r provinces and Newther diffeich further rly than a as a much generally oarren; but the land is our coloter convelly advan-

lds Indian very fine irden stuff here. But

nswer their trade with

ns for that aver prin-

ons, with he peltry.

they fend to to the West-Indies, to a people not very luxurious, nor extremely numerous, furnish though very little money, yet wherewithal in a plentiful country, to render life easy and agreeable.

The nature of the climate severely cold for the most part, and the people manufacturing nothing, shews what the country wants from Europe; wine, brandy, cloths, chiefly coarfe, linen, and wrought iron. The Indian trade requires brandy, tobacco, a fort of duffil blankets, guns, powder and ball, kettles, hatchets, and tomahawks, The Indians with feveral toys and trinkets. fupply the peltry, and the French have traders, whom they call coureurs de bois, who, in the manner of the original inhabitants, traverfing the vast lakes and rivers that divide this country, in canoes of bark, with incredible industry and patience, carry their goods into the remotest parts of America, and amongst nations entirely unknown to us. This again bringsthe market home to them, as the Indians are hereby habituated to trade with them. For this purpose, people from all parts, even. from the distance of a thousand miles, come to the French fair of Mont-Real, which is held in June. On this occasion many folemnities are observed; guards are placed, and the governor affifts to preserve order in such a concourse of such a variety of savage nations. The trade is now in that channel, for though many

many, if not most of these nations, actually pass by our settlement of Albany in New-York, where they may have the goods they want cheaper confiderably than at Mont-Real, they travel on above two hundred miles further, to buy the same commodities at the second hand, and enhanced by the expence of fo long a land carriage, at the French fair. For the French find it cheaper to buy our goods from the New-York merchants than to have them from their own, after so bad and so tedious a passage as it is from the mouth of the river St. Laurence to Mont-Real. So much do the French exceed us in industry, economy, and the arts of conciliating the affections of mankind; things that even ballance all the difadvantages they naturally labour under in this country. Our fort of Oswego was planned for fecuring the Indian trade, and actually brought us a great part of it. But it is now no longer an interruption to the French commerce.

Having mentioned Mont-Real, I have only to observe, that this town is situated in an island in the river St. Laurence. This island lies in a very favourable climate, and is well inhabited and well planted. The city, which is fometimes called Mont-Real, fometimes Ville Marie, is agreeably fituated on a branch of the river St. Laurence; it forms an oblong fquare, divided by regular and well-cut ftreets; pean

ns, actually
ny in Newgoods they
at Montndred miles
es at the feexpence of fo
air. For the
goods from
have them
o tedious a

f the river uch do the nomy, and as of man-

ler in this was well

the difad-

rade, and f it. But on to the

have only ed in an This island d is well ty, which ometimes a branch in oblong at freets;

it contains three convents; with handsome churches, and an hospital for the sick. The fortifications are pretty good. The inhabitants are said to be about five thousand. The river is only navigable hither by canoes, or small craft, having several salls between this town and Quebec. Yet the Indian sair, and the trade of the same kind, which they drive more or less for the whole year, make it no inconsiderable place.

Quebec, the capital, lies much nearer to the sea; from which, however, it is one hundred and fifty leagues distant. The river, which from the fea hither is ten or twelve miles broad, narrows all of a fudden to about a mile wide. The town is divided into an upper and a lower; the houses in both are of stone, and in a tolerable manner. The fortifications are strong, though not regular; but its situation on a rock, washed by the river St. Lawrence, is its chief defence. The city is a bishopric; but the cathedral is mean, and unworthy the capital of New France. The episcopal palace is however a building of a good appearance. Here is likewise a college of Jesuits, not unelegant; two convents and two hospitals. The town is covered with a regular and beautiful citadel, in which the governor resides. This city, though the capital of Canada, is however not very large. It contains about seven or eight thousand inhabitants

30 An ACCOUNT of the EUROPEAN at the utmost. Ships of the greatest burthen load and unload here, and a good many are built.

From Quebec to Mont-Real, which is about one hundred and fifty miles distance, the country on both sides the river is very well settled, and has an agreeable effect upon the eye. The farms lie pretty close all the way; several gentlemen's houses, neatly built, shew themselves at intervals; and there is all the appearance of a flourishing colony; but there are no towns or villages. It is pretty much like the well-settled parts of our colonies of Virginia and Maryland, where the planters are

wholly within themselves.

With all the attention of the court of France to the trade and peopling of this, as well as their other colonies on the continent, they have not been yet able thoroughly to overcome the consequences of those difficulties which the climate, whilft the place was unfettled, threw in their way; their loffes in the wars with that brave and fierce nation the Iroquois, who more than once reduced their colony to their last extremity, and the bad navigation of the river St. Laurence, which is an evil incurable, have kept back the colony. Therefore, though it is the oldest of all the French establishments, and prior to our settlement of New-England, the inhabitants are not above one hundred thousand souls. Some indeed of late

i

which is distance, s very well upon the the way; ouilt, shew is all the but there

etty much

olonies of

ft burthen

EAN

of France as well as ent, they to overdifficulties was undifficulties heir colonavigation an evil indirectore, nch esta-

ement of

not above indeed of

late

late reckon them but at forty thousand. error that is very prejudicial to our affairs, whilst we overvalued our own strength, and underrated the force of the enemy, and acted in a good measure in conformity to such ideas; but even this number, as I estimate it, which I believe is not far from the reality, might be no just cause of dread to our colonies, if they managed the strength they have, and which is certainly much superior, with skill and effect. The French from theirs, though inferior, have feven or eight thousand militia, hardy and well disciplined, always in readiness to cooperate with their regular troops; and there is nothing which may hinder or retard their operations from within themselves. It is therefore not more the French intrigues and their intermarriages with the Indians, which fix that people in the French interest, than the fuccours which they are always fure to have from such a force, ever in readiness to protect them whilst they remain their friends, or to punish them whenever they dare to appear as enemies. With us the case is quite other-This favage people commence hostilities against us without any previous notice, and often without any provocation, they commit the most horrid ravages for a long time with impunity. But when at last their barbarities have roused the sleeping strength of our people, at the same time too that they have confiderably

considerably lessened it, they are not ashamed to beg a peace; they know we always grant it readily; they promise it shall endure as long as the sun and moon; and then all is quiet, till the French intrigues, co-operating with our indolence, give them once more an opportunity of ravaging our colonies, and of once more renewing a peace to be broken like all the former.

The great river St. Laurence is that only upon which the French have settlements of any note; but if we look forward into futurity, it is nothing improbable that this vast country, whoever then shall be the possessors of it, will be enabled of itself to carry on a vast trade upon these great seas of fresh water which it environs. Here are five lakes, the fmallest of which is a piece of sweet water greater than any in the other parts of the world; this is the lake Ontario, which is not less than two hundred leagues in circumference; Erie longer, but not so broad, is about the fame extent. That of the Hurons fpreads greatly in width, and is in circumference not less than three hundred; as is that of Michigan, though like lake Erie, rather long and comparatively narrow. the lake Superior, which contains feveral large islands, is five hundred leagues in the circuit. All of these are navigable by any vessels, and they all communicate with one another, except

m

C

of

lc

n

is

fu

a

in

g

m

p

land

t ashamed ys grant it as long as let, till the our indoortunity of more re-

AN

that only ements of into fututhis vast possessors y on a vast sh water akes, the eet water s of the lich is not circumbroad, is e Hurons circumas is that rie, it is bw. But eral large e circuit. lels, and her, ex-

cept

Vol. II.

cept that the passage between Erie and Ontario is interrupted by the stupendous cataract of Niagara, where the water tumbles down a precipice of twenty-fix fathom high, and makes in this fall a thundering noise, which is heard all round the country at the distance of several The river St. Laurence is the outlet of these lakes; by this they discharge themfelves into the ocean. The French have built forts at the several straits, by which these lakes communicate with each other, as well as where the last of them communicates with the river St. Laurence. By these they effectually secure to themselves the trade of the lakes, and an influence upon all the nations of Americans which confine upon them.

They have but one settlement more in the Northern part of their territories in America, which deferves confideration; but that fettlement, though a finall one, is perhaps of more consequence than all the rest. It is the island of Cape Breton. This island properly belongs to the division of Acadia or Nova-Scotia, and it is the only part of it which has not been ceded by treaty to Great Britain. is about one hundred and fortymiles in length, full of mountains and lakes, and intersected by a vast number of creeks and bays, almost meeting each other on every fide; which feems in general both for the coast and inland, very much to resemble the coast and inland parts of most Northern countries.

34 An Account of the European

land is fo; fo is Iceland; and Denmark and Sweden have fuch shores, such mountains, and fuch lakes. However, the foil is in many places sufficiently fruitful; and in every part abounds with timber fit for all uses. In the earth are coal-pits; and on the shores one of the most valuable fisheries in the world. The only town in this island is Louisbourg. stands upon one of the finest harbours in all This harbour is four leagues in America. circumference, landlocked every way but at the mouth, which is narrow; and within there is fine anchorage every where in feven fathom water. The town itself is of a tolerable fize, and well built and fortified. The harbour is defended by batteries of cannon and forts, which fecure it at this day, perhaps too effectually. This harbour is open the whole year. The French ships that carry goods to Quebec can very feldom get their full loading there, therefore on their return they put into Louisbourg, and there take in a quantity of fish, coal, and some lumber, and then fail away to the French islands in the West-Indies, where they vend these, and soon complete their cargo with fugars. It is needless to observe that this island was taken by us in the late war, but restored by the treaty of Aix la Chapelle, in which we certainly were not in such a condition as to intitle us to prescribe the terms.

CHAP.

CHAP. V.

Louisiana. The Missippi. The Ohio. The fountain of youth. The colony of Louisiana.

THE French have called the South part of the vast tract which they claim in America, Louisiana. It was heretofore a part of Florida. It is bounded by the gulph of Mexico upon the South. But what bounds it is to have to the East and to the West, it is to be wished the next treaty of peace may settle definitively. This is in all respects a much finer country than Canada; in a delicious climate, capable of bearing almost any thing from the temper of the iky, and the goodness of the foil, and from the multitude of long, deep, and beautiful rivers, with which it is every where enriched and adorned; these are most of them navigable for hundreds of miles into the country. They are principally the Miffifippi, whose head is unknown, but it almost goes quite through North America, and at certain feafons overflows its banks for a vast way on both sides. The Ohio, a river almost equal to the Danube, which falls into the Mississippi; the Ouabache, scarce inferior to the Ohio; the great rivers, Alibama, Mobile, and several others. The sace of the D 2 country

id in every
fes. In the
res one of
orld. The
bourg. It
bours in all
leagues in

EAN

mark and nountains,

foil is in

vay but at and within the in feven of a tole-

ied. The of cannon y, perhaps

open the that carry get their

take in a mber, and

ds in the

It is needken by us

treaty of ainly were itle us to

CHAP.

country is almost wholly plain, covered with stately woods, or spread into very fine meadows. In short, Louisiana, particularly the Northern part, (for the mouth of the Missippi is barren) without any of these heightenings which it received, when it was made the instrument to captivate so many to their ruin, is in all respects a most desirable place, though there be no sufficient reasons to believe that it contains any rich metals, which gave it the greatest influence in that remarkable de-

lusion in 1717.

I know not how it has happened, but it has been the fate of this country to create romantic ideas at all times. Very furprising stories were told of it when first the Spaniards discovered the West-India islands. others, a notion was generally current, that there was a fountain here which perpetually renewed the youth of those who drank it. This was fo uniformly and confidently affirmed, that Juan Pontio de Leon, a considerable man among the Spanish adventurers, gave credit to it, and made a particular expedition for the discovery of that fairy land, and that fountain of youth. He was the first of the Europeans who landed in Florida. But what fuccess soever he met with in search for that celebrated fpring, it is certain he died not long after, having fearched every part of the country, and drank of almost every water it contained.

m

W

ſ

d with e mearly the Miffiheights made o their place, believe gave it ble de-

t it has mantic stories ds difnongst t, that etually ink it. affirmlerable gave edition nd that of the what r that ed not f the

ater it

ained.

Nor do I find that so invaluable contained. a spring is yet discovered there; if it were, it would undoubtedly be the best commodity the country could yield, both for domestic consumption, and for the foreign markets, and would be a far better basis for stocks and funds than the richest mines of gold or silver. Yet, without this, an idea, altogether as romantic, of a trade hither, operated so strongly upon a very wife nation, as to ferve for the instrument of one of those dangerous masterstrokes in politics, by which nations are fometimes faved, individuals undone, and an entire change and reversement brought about, not only in the common ways of thinking of mankind, but of all that seemed most fixed and permanent in a state. The famous Missifippi scheme in France was of that nature, and built upon fuch a romantic foundation. well known to all the world, both on its own account, and upon account of a fimilar madness that prevailed here, without perhaps being attended with fuch advantageous consequences.

The French fettled in Louisiana raise some indigo, a good deal of cotton, some corn and rice, with lumber for their islands; but the colony is not very vigorous, on account of the shoals and sands with which the mouth of the river Missisppi is in a manner choaked up, and which deny acceis to vessels of any

confiderable

confiderable burthen. This keeps the inhabitants low; but the cause which keeps them from growing rich contributes too to their fecurity; for it is not easy to act with any great force upon that fide. But the French have not relied upon this advantage; but according to their usual cautious and wife custom, have erected feveral forts in the most material places, and fortified, as it is faid, New Orleans their capital, and indeed the only city in Louisiana, in a regular manner. This city is not remarkably fair, large, or rich; but it is laid out regularly, in a fine fituation on the banks of the Miffisippi, in prospect of an higher fortune. The whole colony is faid not to contain above ten thousand souls, whites and negroes. Yet with all its disadvantages, this colony is not declining; and if ever they should make the mouth of the Missisppi more tractable; (and what is impossible to ambition and industry?) if they should come to fully possess and fettle the Ohio, which at one feafon overflows, and makes fuch flood as to level all the falls almost from its very source to the mouth of the Missisppi, and gives a passage all that way to very confiderable vessels, (though they have not quite the same easy return); and if by this and other means they should contrive a communication between Canada and tho settlement at Louisiana, whilst they entirely confine us between our mountains and the fea, Louisiana

inha-

s them

y great

h have

cording

n, have

naterial

Orleans

city in

his city

1; but

tion on

of an

faid not

itesand

s, this

should

tract-

on and

possess

n over-

all the

mouth

ll that

they

and if

ontrive

nd the entirely he sea,

uisiana

Louisiana in a few years will wear quite another face. It will supply their West-Indies with boards, staves, horses, mules, and provifions. It will fend tobacco into France; and increasing the conveniencies of its mother country, and fifter colonies, it will increase its own traffic, its inhabitants, and its power. But the French not trusting to this remote prospect, have established themselves at the mouth of the Mobile; a river which falls into the gulph of Mexico. And many are of opinion that this is a more advantageous fituation, not only for the maritime but for the inland commerce, and the communication of their colonies, than the Missispi. It certainly approaches much nearer to our fettlements, and whilst it serves the French better, is much better calculated to annoy our Southern colonies. We have feen how the French West-Indies in less than forty years, from a condition which could excite no other fentiments than those of compassion, are risen to such a pitch as to be an object of great and just terror to her neighbours; and we now feel too, that the French settlements in North America, even fuch as they are, are not an undermatch for the whole force of ours, in the manner at least in which that force is exerted.

D 4

CHAP.

CHAP. VI.

The French policy with regard to their colonies.

HAT we may not fit down in a senseless admiration of this progress of the French colonies, as if it were the work of fortune, it will not be amiss to open something of the wife plan of conduct which France has pursued with regard to this interesting object. They are sensible, as the mother country is to receive ultimately all the benefits of their labours and acquisitions, so that all the prosperity of their plantations must be derived from the attention with which they are regarded at home. For which reason the plantations are particularly under the care and inspection of the council of commerce; a board very judiciously constituted to answer the purposes for which it is defigned. To give it a proper respect and authority, it is composed of twelve of the most considerable officers of the crown; and then to enable it to judge perfectly of the matters which come before it, these twelve are assisted by the deputies of all the confiderable trading towns and cities in France, who are chosen out of the richest and most intelligent of their traders, and paid an handsome salary for their attendance at Paris, from co po tral for old im the lig tue arti poi but are ceid the fliff cou vex acti fufl

fro

of of the by opi ful

the

tha

var

wh

olonies. fenfeof the ork of fomewhich inteother enefits all the erived re replannd inboard the give npoffficers judge bre it, of all es in ft and id an Paris,

from

from the funds of their respective cities. This council fits once a week. The deputies propose plans for redressing every grievance in trade; for raising the branches that are fallen; for extending new ones; for supporting the old; and in fine, for every thing that may improve the working, or promote the vent of their manufactures, according to their own lights, or to the instructions of their constituents. They have a watchful eye upon every article of commerce; and they not only propose helps and improvements to it themselves, but they hear the proposals of others, which are not disdainfully rejected, nor rashly received. They do not render the access to them difficult, by fwelling themselves into a stiff and unwieldly state. They do not discourage those who apply, by admitting the vexatious practice of fees, perquifites, and exactions, in their inferior officers. They do not fuffer form and methods to load and encumber that business, they were folely intended to ad-They fummon and examine those who are supposed the most competent judges of the matter before them, and of every part of it, even the lowest artizans: but though they examine those men, they are instructed by their experience, not determined by their opinion. When they are fatisfied of the usefulness of any regulation, they propose it to the royal council, where their report is al-

ways

ways received with particular attention. An edict to enforce it issues accordingly; and it is executed with a punctuality which distinguishes their government, and which alone can make the wisest regulations any thing better than serious mockeries. To the care of this excellent body the plantations are par-

ticularly entrusted.

The government of the feveral divisions of their colonies is in a governor, an intendant, and a royal council. The governor is invested with a great deal of power; which however, on the fide of the crown, is checked by the intendant, who has the care of the king's rights, and whatever relates to the revenue; and on the fide of the people, it is checked by the royal council, whose office it is, to fee that the people are not oppressed by the one, nor defrauded by the other; and they are all checked by the constant and jealous eye which the government at home keeps over them. For the officers at all the ports of France are charged under the severest penalties, to interrogate all captains of ships coming from the colonies concerning the reception they met at the ports they were bound to; how justice was administered to them? what charges they were made liable to, and of what kinds? The passengers, and even the sailors are examined upon these heads, and a verbal process of the whole is formed and transmitted with all

all and hea it.

as lefs trig his qui to o tion any wit live

> paid of

rep fan

wh hav An adv ne Th at ne

ing

ţo

on. An and it is a distinct alone thing the care are par-

AN

visions of ntendant, or is in; which checked to of the reople, it is office it oressed by and they calous eye teps over of France ies, to in-

w justice charges at kinds? are exaal process ted with all

from the

ey met at

all speed to the admiralty. Complaints are encouraged; but a difference is made between hearing an accusation and condemning upon it.

That the colonies may have as little load as possible, and that the governor may have less temptation to stir up troublesome intrigues, or favour factions in his government, his falary is paid by the crown. His perquisites are none; and he is strictly forbidden to carry on any trade, or to have any plantations in the islands, or on the continent, or any interest whatever in goods or lands within his government, except the house he lives in, and a garden for his convenience All the other officers are and recreation. paid by the crown, and out of the revenues of Old France; the fortifications are built and repaired, and the foldiers are paid out of the same funds.

In general the colonies pay no taxes; but when upon an extraordinary emergency taxes have been raised, they were very moderate. And, that even the taxes might operate for the advancement of the colony, they who began new plantations, were exempted from them. The duties upon the export of their produce at the islands, or at its import into France, is next to nothing; in both places hardly making two per cent. What commodities go to them, pay no duties at all.

Besides

An ACCOUNT of the EUROPEAN

Besides these advantages, a considerable benefit accrues to fuch of the colonies as are poor. as Canada, by the money which comes from France to support the establishmeet. brings into Canada about 120,000 crowns a year, which finds them circulating cash; preferves them from the dangerous expedient of a paper currency; enables them to keep up their intercourse with some credit, with their mother country; and at the same time is in fact no loss at all to it, since the money returns home almost as soon as it can possibly be transported back again.

In all their islands, judges of the admiralty are appointed to decide in a fummary manner all disputes between merchants, and whatsoever else has any relation to trade. judges are strictly examined before they are appointed, particularly as to their skill in the marine laws, which have been improved and digested in France with so much care and good sense, that all law suits are quickly over; though in other respects the practice of law admits of as much chicanery, and has as many, if not more delays, than with us.

After having taken such precautions to fecure the good government of the colony within itself, and to make its communication with the mother country easy and beneficial to both fides, all would be to very little purpose, if they had not provided with equal

care

card peoi ever Amed i der : dred **ferva** ages parti cers the tion miff are t plan flave the fubfi the polit the mad ther law ferv: the

com

the

requ

wife

ters

able beare poor, es from This rowns a h; predient of ceep up , with e time is onev repoffibly

miralty manner whatfo-These hey are kill in

mprovch care quickractice

nd has

to fewithcation eficial e purequal care

care to have the country replenished with people. To answer this end, they oblige every ship which departs from France for America, to carry a certain number of indent-All vessels of fixty tuns or uned fervants. der are to carry three; from fixty to a hundred, four; and from a hundred upwards, fix fervants; found strong bodies, between the ages of eighteen and forty. Before their departure, the servants are examined by the officers of the admiralty, to see whether they are the persons required by law; an examination to the same purpose is made by the commissary on their landing in America. They are to serve three years. The avarice of the planters makes them always prefer negroe flaves, because they are more obedient than the Europeans; may be more worked, are fublished with less difficulty, and are besides the entire property of their master. This disposition, in time, would render the safety of the colony extremely precarious, whilst it made the colony itself of less value to the mother country. Therefore the planters are by law obliged to keep a certain number of white fervants in proportion to their blacks; and the execution of this law is inforced by the commissary, who adjusts the price, and forces the planters to take the number of servants required by the ordinance, who would otherwife be a burthen upon the hands of the masters of ships who brought them over. They

46 An ACCOUNT of the EUROPEAN

They consider the planter, as a Frenchman venturing his life, enduring a species of banishment, and undergoing great hardships for the benefit of his country. For which reasons, he has great indulgence shewn him. Whenever by hurricanes, earthquakes, or bad feafons, the planters fuffer, a stop is put to the rigour of exacting creditors; the few taxes which are levied, are remitted; and even money is advanced to repair their losses and set them To those who are poor, but shew a disposition to industry, necessaries and small fums are lent, to make a beginning; and this money is taken in gradually, and by very small payments. On the other hand, as it can be of no advantage to the planter to run fraudulently into debt, but that it is of the greatest prejudice to the French merchant, all debts, though contracted by the planters in France, are levied with great ease. process, properly authenticated, is transmitted to America, and admitted as proved there, and levied on the planter's estate, of whatsoever kind it may be. However, care is taken, that whilst compulsory methods are used to make the planter do justice, the state shall not lose the industry of an useful member of the community; the debt is always levied according to the substance of the debtor, and by installments; so that (what ought indeed to be the case in every well-regulated government) one of the parties is not facrificed to the other. Both

Bot deb cole by cov

the

discoblance of from the and creating the cre

co we fu co

tui

ho

po ju va pl

CO

AN renchman es of badships for h reasons. . Whenad feafons. he rigour es which

money is fet them but shew and fmall ing; and d by very and, as it ier to run is of the nerchant, e planters The ſe.

ved there, f whatfois taken. are used state shall ember of evied ac-

transmit-

r, and by leed to be ernment) he other.

Both

Both subsist: the creditor is satisfied: debtor is not ruined; and the credit of the colonies is kept in health and vigour at home, by the fure methods which are in use for recovering all demands in the plantations.

As to the negroes, they are not left as they are with us, wholly, body and foul to the discretion of the planter. Their masters are obliged to have them instructed in the principles of religion. There are methods taken at once to protect the flaves from the cruelty of their owners, and to preserve the colony from the ill effects, that might arise from treating them with a lenity not confistent with their condition. In short, the Code Noir, and other ordinances relative to these poor creatures, shew a very just and sensible mixture of humanity and steadiness. however one error, their planters commit in common with ours; which is, that they overwork these unhappy men in a manner not fuitable to the nature of the climate, or to their constitutions.

I have dwelt the longer upon the French policy as it regards their colonies, because it is just to give due honour to all those, who advance the intercourse of mankind, the peopling of the earth, and the advantage of their country by wife and effectual regulations. But I principally infift upon it, that it may, if pos-

fible, serve for an example to ourselves: that it may excite an emulation in us; that it may help to rouse us out of that languor into which we feem to be fallen. The war we now carry on, principally regards our colonies, and is a sufficient proof that we are come at last to know their value. But if we are not to hope for better success than has hitherto attended a very just cause, the next peace will probably contract the field we hoped to lay open to our industry in America. But we ought therefore to cultivate what still remains of it, with tenfold industry; we ought to guard with the most unremitting vigilance that enclosed fpring, that sealed fountain, the waters of which we referve to ourselves, and direct into fuch channels, and make to purfue fuch windings and turnings as best serve our purposes. We have, I believe, pretty well discovered most of our errors, and the advantage our enemy and rival has taken, not only of our fupineness, but of a contrary genius in his own We ought to rouse ourselves from the former, and prepare to imitate the latter. Our business is to fight against Alexander, not to rail at him. And truly, I do not know any thing, that for this long time past has contributed more to degrade our character for humanity in the eyes of foreigners, or to instil into ourselves a low and illiberal way of thinking

thi and we tion ple ing ofand my in a low cen the ing, a tii criti fucc be ! nefi forb mis ill-r avo less adv

this

mu

s; that it may o which ow car-, and is last to o hope ended a robably to our theret, with d with nclosed ters of ect into windrposes. overed re our ur fuis own s from latter. ander. know st has aracter or to vay of

nking

thinking, than that vein of licentious scurrility and abuse, by which, in all forts of writings, we are apt to vilify and traduce the French nation. There is nothing, which hinders people from acting properly, more than indulging themselves in a vain and effeminate licence of tongue. A man who loves his country, and can at once oppose, and esteem an enemy, would view our present circumstances in a light, I conceive, somewhat like the following. We have been engaged for above a century with France in a noble contention for the superiority in arms, in politics, in learning, and in commerce; and there never was a time, perhaps, when this struggle was more critical. If we succeed in the war, even our fuccess, unless managed with prudence, will be like some former successes, of little benesit to us; if we should fail, which God forbid, even then, prudence may make our misfortunes of more use to us, than an ill-managed success; if they teach us to avoid our former errors; if they make us less careless; if they make us cultivate the advantages we have with care and judgment: this, and not our opinion of the enemy, must decide the long contest between us.

Vol. II. E CHAP.

CHAP. VII.

The Dutch settlements. Curassou. The city, its trade. The Spanish counterband. Eufatia. The Danish company. The Danish island of Santa Cruz. The characters of the several European nations as they regard America.

FTER the Portuguese had dispossessed the Dutch of Brazil in the manner we have feen; and after the treaty of Nimeguen had entirely removed them out of North America, they were obliged to confole themfelves with their rich possessions in the East-Indies, and to fit down content in the West with Surinam; a country on the North-East part of South America, of no great value whilst we had it, and which we ceded to them in exchange for New-York; and with two or three small and barren islands in the Northsea not far from the Spanish main. The former of these, they are far from neglecting; they raise some sugar in Surinam; a great deal of cotton; coffee of an excellent kind, and valuable dying drugs. They trade with our North American colonies, who bring hither horses, live cattle and provisions, and take home a large quantity of molasses; but their negroes are only the refuse

hoo farm men oth non

Cur non the indi mo rally ten it I fug: great to t is a

tert and

on

this

in 1

the

at t

he city, !. Eu-Danish Eters of regard

offessed iner we neguen North

e theme Easte West
th-East
t value
o them
th two

North-The ecting; eat deal d, and

trade who provifiity of ly the refuse refuse of those they have for the Spanish market; and the Indians in their neighbour-hood are their mortal enemies. On the same continent they have three other settlements at no considerable distance from each other, Boron, Berbice, and Approwack; none very great, but producing the same commodities with Surinam.

The islands which they possess are four, Curaffou, St. Eustatia, Aruba and Bonaire; none of them large or fertile, but turned to the best advantage possible by that spirit of industry for which the Dutch are justly famous. Curacco or Curaffou, as it is generally called, is about thirty miles long, and ten in breadth. Though it is naturally barren it produces a confiderable quantity both of fugar and tobacco, and here are besides very great falt works, which furnish a good deal to the English islands, and for which there is a confiderable demand from our colonies on the continent; but the trade for which this island is chiefly valuable, is that which in time of war is carried on between them, the English, and the French; and the counterband which is carried on between them and the Spaniards at all times.

The Dutch vessels from Europe touch at this island for intelligence or proper pilots, and then proceed to the Spanish coast upon a trade which they force with a strong hand.

It is very difficult for the Spanish guarda costas to take these vessels; for they are not only stout ships with a number of guns; but by a very wise policy manned with a large crew of chosen seamen, who are all deeply interested in the safety of the vessel and the success of the voyage. They have each a share in the cargo of a value proportioned to the owner's station, supplied by the merchants upon credit, and at prime cost. This animates them with an uncommon courage; they sight bravely, because every man sights in desence of his own property. But there is besides this, a constant intercourse between the Spanish continent and this island.

The island of Curassou has its numerous warehouses always full of the commodities of Europe, and the East-Indies. Here are all forts of woollen and linen cloths, laces, filks, ribbands, utenfils of iron, naval and military stores, brandy, the spices of the Moluccas, and the callicoes of India, white and painted. Hither the West-India, which is likewise their African company, bring three or four cargoes of flaves annually. To this mart, the Spaniards come themselves in small vessels, and carry off not only the best of their negroes, and at the best price, but very great quantities of all forts of goods I have mentioned; with this advantage to the feller, that the refuse of warehouses and

off fuff The or d bark The to t on or like carg and trad is r less time then um retre famo and The ed, othe well the] corn

bring

or v

and

unf

and mercers shops, things grown utterly ıarda unfashionable and unsaleable in Europe, go e not off extremely well, where every thing is ; but large fufficiently recommended by being European. ly in-They leave here their gold and filver in bars or coined, cacao, vanilla, cochineal, jesuit's d the bark, hides, and other valuable commodities. ch a The ships that trade directly from Holland ioned to the Spanish continent, as they touch here meron their outward passage to gain intelligence This or affistance, on their return put in here coulikewise to compleat what is wanting of their man cargo, with the fugar, the tobacco, the ginger, But courfe and other produce of the island itself. The trade of this island, even in times of peace, fland. is reputed to be worth to the Dutch, no erous less than 500,000l. sterl. annually, but in odities time of war the profit is far greater, for re are then it is in a manner the common emporilaces, um of the West-Indies; it affords a great il and Moretreat to the ships of all nations, and at the fame time refuses to none of them arms te and and ammunition to annoy one another. ich is The intercourse with Spain being interruptthree ed, the Spanish colonies have scarce any b this other market, from whence they can be **fmall** well supplied either with slaves or goods; est of , but the French come hither to buy the beef, pork, goods corn, flour and lumber, which the English bring from the continent of North America, ge to or which is transported from Ireland; so houses E 3

and

that whether in peace, or in war, the trade of this island flourishes extremely. Nor is this owing to any natural advantage whatfo-It seems as if it were fated, that the ingenuity and patience of the Hollanders should every where, both in Europe and America, be employed in fighting against an unfriendly nature: for the island is not only barren, and dependent upon the rains for its water, but the harbour is naturally one of the worst in America; but the Dutch have entirely remedied that defect; they have upon this harbour one of the largest, and by far the most elegant and cleanly towns in The public buildings the American islands. are numerous and handsome; the private houses commodious; and the magazines large, convenient, and well filled. All kind of labour is here performed by engines; some of them so dexterously contrived, that ships are at once lifted into the dock, where they are compleatly careened; and then furnished with naval flores, provisions, cannon, and every thing requifite either for trade or war.

Eustatia is but one mountain of about twenty miles in compass; it is amongst the Leeward islands; but though so small and inconveniently laid out by nature, the industry of the Dutch have made it turn out to very good account, and it is fully peopled; the sides of the mountain are divided and laid

thou they prop and tobac is en for ted; its c

laid

Cura quen fing and use

T

fettle Wef ships half pany of w the

compexter of St of their

the

laid out in very pretty settlements; and though they have neither springs nor rivers, they are so careful that they never want proper supplies of water from their ponds and cisterns. They raise here sugar and tobacco; and this island, as well as Curassou, is engaged in the Spanish counterband trade, for which, however, it is not so well situated; and it draws the same advantages from its constant neutrality.

As for Aruba and Bonaire; they lie near Curassou, and have no trade of consequence; they are chiefly employed in raising fresh provisions for the principal island, and for the refreshment of such ships as

use these seas.

trade

Nor is

hatfo-

at the

anders

e and

inst an

t only

ns for

one of

ı have

have

t, and

vns in

ildings

private

azines

kind

fome

t ships

they

nished

, and

war.

about

ft the

ll and

ie in-

n out

opled;

d and

laid

The trade of all the Dutch American fettlements was originally carried on by the West-India company only. At present such ships as go upon that trade pay two and a half per cent. for their licences; the company however reserves to itself, the whole of what is carried on between Africa and the American islands.

The Danes had likewise a West-India company, though its object was far from extensive. It was little more than the island of St. Thomas, an inconsiderable member of the Caribbees; lately they have added to their possessions the island of Santa Cruz in the same cluster. These islands, so long as

E 4 they

they remained in the hands of the company, were ill managed, and nothing like the proper advantage was made of them; but the present king of Denmark, inferior to none who ever fat upon that or any other throne, in love to his subjects, and a judicious zeal for promoting their welfare, has bought up that company's stock, and laid Since then, the old fettlethe trade open. ment at St. Thomas is very much improved; it produces upwards of three thousand hogsheads of sugar at a thousand weight each, and others of the West-Indian commodities in tolerable plenty; and as for Santa Cruz, from a perfect desart a few years fince, it is beginning to fettle fast; several persons from the English islands, and amongst them some of great wealth, have gone to fettle there, and have received very great encouragement to do fo. The air of the place is extremely unhealthful, but this ill disposition will probably continue no longer than the woods, with which the island at present is almost wholly covered. These two nations, the Dutch and Danes, hardly deserve to be mentioned amongst the proprietors of America; their possessions there are comparatively nothing. But as they appear extremely worthy of the attention of these powers, and as the share of the Dutch is worth to them at least fix hundred thousand pounds

of no ma

der tha nat Th has foft pro all whi

hon ous Spa feffe ofte

rath much and inde they nobl and layir

layir rant made of them by that attention?

There seems to be a remarkable providence in the casting the parts, if I may use that expression, of the several European nations who act upon the stage of America. The Spaniard, proud, lazy and magnificent, has an ample walk in which to expatiate; a soft climate to indulge his love of ease; and a prosusion of gold and silver to procure him all those luxuries his pride demands, but which his laziness would result him.

The Portuguese, naturally indigent at home, and enterprizing rather than industrious abroad, has gold and diamonds as the Spaniard has, wants them as he does, but possesses them in a more useful, though a less

ostentatious manner.

The English, of a reasoning disposition, thoughtful and cool, and men of business rather than of great industry, impatient of much fruitless labour, abhorrent of constraint, and lovers of a country life, have a lot which indeed produces neither gold nor filver; but they have a large tract of a fine continent; a noble field for the exercise of agriculture, and sufficient to surnish their trade without laying them under great dissipulties. Intolerant as they are of the most useful restraints, their

comike the
n; but
ior to

other judicie, has ad laid fettleproved; hogt each,

nmodi-

Santa y years feveral mongst one to eat enof the this ill

longer and at fe two deferve tors of comappear

these itch is ousand oounds

their commerce flourishes from the freedom every man has of pursuing it according to his own ideas, and directing his life after his own fashion.

The French, active, lively, enterprizing, pliable and politic, and though changing their pursuits, always pursuing the present object with eagerness, are notwithstanding tractable and obedient to rules and laws which bridle these dispositions, and wind and turn them to proper courses. This people have a country, where more is to be effected by managing the people than by cultivating the ground; where a pedling commerce, that requires constant motion, flourishes more than agriculture or a regular traffic; where they have difficulties which keep them alert by struggling with them, and where their obedience to a wife government serves them for personal wisdom. In the islands the whole is the work of their policy, and a right turn their government has taken.

The Dutch have got a rock or two on which to display the miracles of frugality and diligence, (which are their virtues,) and on which they have exerted these virtues, and shewn those miracles.

PART

not

lig

tur

but

of

for

aln

anc

flor and for N freedom ding to fe after

prizing,
hanging
prefent
standing
hd laws
hd wind
This
is to be
than by
pedling
motion,
regular
which
them,

governom. In of their ernment

two on rugality rirtues, virtues,

ART

PART VI.

The English Settlements.

CHAP. I.

The division of the English West-Indies. Description of Jamaica. Conquest of that island.

THE English colonies are the fairest objects of our attention in America, not only as they comprehend a vast and delightful variety of climates, situations, natural products, and improvements of art; but as they contain, though the dominions of one potentate, and their inhabitants formed out of the people of one nation, an almost equal variety of manners, religions and ways of living. They have a most flourishing trade with their mother country, and they communicate widely with many foreign nations; for besides the constant

and useful intercourse they hold with Africa, their ships are seen in the ports of Spain, Portugal, Italy, and even in the Levant; nor are they excluded the American settlements of France, Spain, Portugal and Holland. This, with their constant correspondence with each other, and with their mother country, hurries about a lively circulation of trade, of which Great Britain is the heart and spring, from whence it takes its rise, and to which it all returns in the end.

In some of the European settlements we have seen the effects of a vast ambition supported by surprizing seats of a romantic courage mixed with an insatiable thirst of gold. In others, the regular product of a systematic policy tempering and guiding an active industry; but in our own colonies we are to display the effects of liberty; the work of a people guided by their own genius, and following the directions of their own natural temper in a proper path.

I intend to confider the English colonies under two principal divisions; the first I allot to those islands which lie under the torrid zone between the tropic of Cancer and the Equinoctial line, in that part generally called the West-Indies. The second is to comprehend our possessions in the temperate zone on the continent of North Ame-

rica.

ric

fid

Aπ

ifla

lar the

thii Mo

isla

be

tur: the

of

nea

eve

tho

give

deg

and

gre

len

for

and

ma

mo the

the

m

mo

n Africa;

f Spain,

Levant;

n fettlegal and

t correth their
vely cir
Britain is

it takes

s in the

ents we on sup-omantic hirst of a ding an nies we work genius,

first I
er the
Cancer
genesecond
e temAme-

rica.

ir own

The West-India islands shall be confidered, as they are amongst the Greater Antilles; the Windward; or the Leeward Amongst the first we possess the large and noble island of Jamaica; amongst the fecond we have Barbadoes; and in the third St. Christopher's, Antegua, Nevis, Montserrat, and Barbuda. As all these islands lie between the tropics, whatever is to be faid of the air, winds, meteors, and natural produce, shall fall under one head, as they are the fame or nearly the fame in all of them; their produce for the market is nearly the same too; and therefore whatever is to be faid of the manufacturing of those, shall come together, after we have given a concise description of the state of each island separately.

Jamaica lies between the 75th and 79th degrees of West longitude from London, and is between seventeen and nineteen degrees distant from the Equinoctial. It is in length, from East to West, a hundred and forty English miles; in breadth about sixty; and of an oval form. This country is in a manner intersected with a ridge of losty mountains, rugged and rocky, that are called the blue mountains. On each side of the blue mountains are chains of lesser mountains gradually lower. The greater mountains are little better than so many

rocks;

rocks; where there is any earth, it is only a stubborn clay fit for no fort of husbandry. The mountains are very steen, and the rocks tumbled upon one another in a manner altogether stupendous, the effect of ... taguent earthquakes which have shake this mand Yet barren as these mountains in all times. are, they are all covered to the very top with a great variety of beautiful trees, flourishing in a perpetual spring; their roots penetrate the crannies of the rocks, and fearch out the moisture which is lodged there by the rains that fall so frequently on these mountains, and the mists that almost perpetually brood upon them. These rocks too are the parents of a vast number of fine rivulets, which tumble down their fides in cataracts, that form amongst the rudeness of the rocks and precipices, and the shining verdure of the trees, the most wildly pleasing imagery ima-The face of this country is a good deal different from what is generally observed in other places. For as on one hand the mountains are very steep; so the plains between them are perfectly smooth and level. In these plains, the soil augmented by the wash of the mountains for so many ages, is prodigiously fertile. None of our islands produce so fine sugars. They formerly had here cacao in great perfection, which delights in a rich ground. Their pastures after the rains,

rain ext van not nin the and the work ples

who fpri plain the is a virtu one pers

dur mea defi greaturi the

ign

rains, are of a most beautiful verdure, and extraordinary fatness. They are called Savannas. On the whole, if this island were not troubled with great thunders and lightnings, hurricanes, and earthquakes; and if the air was not at once violently hot, damp, and extremely unwholsome in most parts, the fertility and beauty of this country would make it as desirable a situation for pleasure, as it is for the profits, which in spite of these disadvantages draw hither such a number of people.

The river waters are many of them unwholsome, and taste of copper; but some springs there are of a better kind. In the plains are found several salt fountains; and in the mountains, not far from Spanish-town, is a hot bath, of extraordinary medicinal virtues. It relieves in the dry belly-ach, one of the most terrible endemial distempers of Jamaica, and in various other

complaints.

only a

bandry.

e rocks

mer al-

gauent

: mand

untains

p with

irishing

enetrate

out the

ne rains

untains.

y brood parents

which

s, that

cks and of the

ry ima-

a good

obser-

e hand

plains

d level.

by the

ges, is

issands ly had

elights

fter the rains,

This island came into our possession during the usurpation of Cromwell, and by means of an armament which had another destination. Cromwell, notwithstanding the great abilities which enabled him to overturn the constitution, and to trample upon the liberties of his country, was not sufficiently acquainted with foreign politics. This ignorance made him connect himself closely with

with France, then rifing into a dangerous grandeur, and to fight with great animosity, the shadow which remained of the Spanish power. On such ideas he sitted out a formidable sleet, with a view to reduce the island of Hispaniola; and though he sailed in this design, Jamaica made amends not only for this sailure, but almost for the ill policy which first drew him into hostilities with the Spaniards; by which, however, he added this excellent country to the British dominions.

There was nothing of the genius of Cromwell to be feen in the planning of this expedition. From the first to the last all was wrong; all was a chain of little interested mismanagement, and had no air of the result of absolute power lodged in great hands. The fleet was ill victualled; the troops ill provided with necessaries to support and encourage men badly chosen and worse armed. They embarked in great discontent. The generals were but little better fatisfied, and had little more hopes than the foldiers. the generals, (for there were two in the command, Pen and Venables, one for the marine, the other for the land fervice,) were men of no extraordinary talents. And if they had been men of the best capacity, little was to be expected from two commanders not subordinate, and so differing in their ideas,

id an th an of T D be ed wit thd lan the Th bef out

> diff and caff Th

dyi

and

to wi

ene

ver, he

British

ius of this all was aterested e result hands. pops ill armed. The

in the for the of the o

d, and

SETTLEMENTS in AMERICA. 65 ideas, and so envious of each other as land and sea-officers generally are. But to make this arrangement perfect in all respects, and to improve the advantages arising from a divided command, they added a number of commissioners as a check upon both. This tripartite generalship, in the truest Dutch taste, produced the effects that might be expected from it. The foldiers differed with the generals, the generals difagreed with one another, and all quarrelled with the commissioners. The place of their landing in Hispaniola was ill chosen, and the manner of it wretchedly contrived. The army had near forty miles to march before it could act; and the foldiers, without order, without heart, fainting dying by the excessive heat of the climate and the want of necessary provisions, and disheartened yet more by the cowardice and discontent of their officers, yielded an easy victory to an handful of Spaniards. They retired ignominiously and with great loss.

But the principal commanders, a little reconciled by their misfortunes, and fearing to return to England without effect, very wifely turned their thoughts another way. They resolved to attempt Jamaica, before the inhabitants of that island could receive encouragement by the news of their defeat

Vol. II. F in

66 An ACCOUNT of the EUROPEAN

in Hispaniola. They knew that this island was in no good posture of defence; and they set themselves vigorously to avoid the mistakes, which proved so fatal in the former expedition. They severely punished the officers who had shewn an ill example by their cowardice; and they ordered with respect to the soldiers, that if any attempted to run away, the man nearest to him should shoot him.

Fortified with these regulations they landed in Jamaica, and laid siege to St. Jago de la Vega, now called Spanish-town, the capital of the island. The people, who were in no condition to oppose an army of ten thousand men, and a strong naval force, would have surrendered immediately, if they had not been encouraged by the strange delays of our generals and their commissioners. However at last the town with the whole island surrendered, but not until the inhabitants had secreted their most valuable effects in the mountains.

CHAP.

The

well empune islan wer

raifing For felver ards for tice

vant

Span tatic fore wan used which

be pattril

CHAP. II.

The settlement of Jamaica. The failure of cacao. The buccaneers. The flourishing state of that island. Its decline in some respects.

FTER the restoration, the Spaniards ceded the island to our court. Cromwell had fettled there some of the troops employed in its reduction; some royalists uneafy at home fought an afylum in this island; not a few planters from Barbadoes were invited to Jamaica by the extraordinary fertility of the foil, and the other advantages which it offered. These latter taught the former fettlers the manner of raising the sugar cane, and making sugar. For at first they had wholly applied themselves to the raising of cacao, as the Spaniards had done before them. It was happy for them that they fell into this new practice; for the cacao groves planted by the Spaniards began to fail, and the new plantations did not answer, as the negroes foretold they would not, because of the want of certain religious ceremonies always used by the Spaniards in planting them, at which none of the slaves were suffered to be prefent, and to the use of which they attributed the prosperity of these plantations.

A P.

island

e; and oid the ne for-

inished xample

d with

empted

should

s they

st. Jago

vn, the

rmy of

l force,

ely, if strange

mmissi-

ith the

valua-

at that time, that were covered by the veil of these religious ceremonies, which are necessary to the well-being of that plant. However that be, the cacao has never since equalled the reputation of the Spanish, but gave way to the more prositable cultivation

of Indigo and fugar.

But what gave the greatest life to this new fettlement, and raifed it at once to a furprizing pitch of opulence, which it hardly equals even in our days, was the refort thither of those pirates called the buccaneers. These men who sought with the most desperate bravery, and fpent their plunder with the most stupid extravagance, were very welcome guests in Jamaica. often brought two, three, and four hundred thousand pieces of eight at a time, which were immediately fquandered in all the ways of excessive gaming, wine and women. Vast fortunes were made, and the returns of treasure to England were prodigiously great. In the island they had by this means raised fuch funds, that when the fource of this wealth was stopped up by the suppression of the pirates, they were enabled to turn their industry into better channels. They increased so fast, that it was computed that in the beginning of this century, they had fixty thousand whites and a hundred and twenty

nu (or and part call of mu find that mu

cot coa an wh is c fall hav

def

cle: in the taken
he veil
ch are
plant.
er fince
th, but
tivation

to this ce to a hardly refort caneers. oft def-plunder

They undred which all the women. returns y great. is raifed

pression to turn They ed that

of this

ney had ed and twenty SETTLEMENTS in AMERICA.

twenty thousand negroes in this island. This calculation is certainly too large. However, the Jamaicans were undoubtedly very numerous until reduced by earthquakes, (one of which entirely ruined Port-Royal, and killed a vast number of persons in all parts of the country) and by terrible epidemical diseases, which treading on the heels of the former calamities swept away vast multitudes. Losses which have not been fince fufficiently repaired. At present the white inhabitants scarcely exceed twenty five thousand souls; the blacks are about ninety thousand; both much less numerous than formerly, and with a disproportion

much greater on the fide of the whites. It appears at present, that Jamaica is rather upon the decline; a point this that deserves the most attentive consideration. A country which contains at least four millions of acres, has a fertile soil, an extensive sea coast, and many very fine harbours, for an island so circumstanced, and at a time when the value of all its products at market is confiderably rifen, for fuch a country to fall short of its former numbers, and not to have above three or four hundred thousand acres employed in any fort of culture, shews clearly that fomething must be very wrong in the management of its affairs; and what shews it even yet more clearly, land is so

F 3

extravagantly

An Account of the European 70 extravagantly dear in many of the other islands, as to sell sometimes for one hundred pounds an acre and upwards; a price that undoubtedly never would be paid, if convenient land was to be had, and proper encouragement given in Jamaica. Whether this be owing to public or private faults, I know not; but certain it is, that wherever they are, they deserve a speedy and effectual remedy from those, in whose power it is to apply it.

CHAP. III.

The products of Jamaica. Piemento. Sugar. Molasses. Cotton. Ginger. The logwood trade. Disputes about it. The counterband. Slave trade.

HE natural products of Jamaica, befides fugar, cacao, and ginger, are principally piemento, or, as it is called, allspice, or Jamaica pepper. The tree which bears the piemento rises to the height of above thirty feet. It is straight, of a moderate thickness, and covered with a grey bark extremely smooth and shining. It shoots out a vast number of branches upon all sides, that bear a plentiful foliage of very large and beautiful leaves of a thining green, in all things resembling the leaf of the bay tree.

At

bu

flo

ber

pal

of

tha

cha

bla

uni in !

hav

 $\mathbf{w}\mathbf{h}$ tha

infe

it d

Th

tre

cin

to t

and

orr

app

tre

nat

nei

cal

fut

gro

ma

e other nundred ce that if conper en-/hether faults, herever ffectual it is to

Sugar.
The

ca, beer, are
ellipice,
h bears
above
oderate
y bark
fhoots
l fides,
y large

At

en, in

y tree.

At the very end of the twigs are formed bunches of flowers; each stalk bearing a flower which bends back, and within which bend are to be discerned some stamina of a pale green colour; to these succeeds a bunch of small crowned berries, larger when ripe than juniper berries; at that season they change from their former green, and become black, smooth, and shining; they are taken unripe from the tree, and dried in the fun; in this case they assume a brown colour, and have a mixed flavour of many kinds of spice, whence it is called allspice. But it is milder than the other spices, and is judged to be inferior to none of them for the service which it does to cold, watery and languid stomachs. The tree grows mostly upon the mountains.

Besides this, they have the wild cinamon tree, whose bark is so serviceable in medicine; the manchineel, a most beautiful tree to the eye, with the fairest apple in the world, and when cut down affording a very fine ornamental wood for the joiners, but the apple, and the juice in every part of the tree, contain one of the worst poisons in nature. Here is the mahogany, in such general use with our cabinet makers; the cabbage tree, a tall plant, samous for a substance, looking and tasting like cabbage, growing on the very top, and no less remarkable for the extreme hardness of its

4 wood

wood, which when dry is incorruptible, and hardly yields to any tool; the palma, from which is drawn a great deal of oil, much esteemed by the negroes both in food and medicine; the white wood, which never breeds the worm in ships; the soap tree, whose berries answer all purposes of washing; the mangrove and olive bark, useful to tanners; the fusic and redwood to the dvers, and lately the logwood; and their forests supply the apothecary with guaicum, falfaparilla, china, cassia, and tamarinds; they have aloes too; and do not want the cochineal plant, though they know nothing of the art of managing it; nor perhaps is the climate suit-The indigo plant was formerly much cultivated; the cotton tree is still so, and they fend home more of its wool than all the rest of our islands together.

The whole product therefore of the island may be reduced to these heads. First, sugars, of which they imported in 1753 twenty thousand three hundred and fifteen hogsheads, some vastly great even to a tun weight, which cannot be worth less in England than 424,725 pounds sterling. Most of this goes to London and Briftol, and fome part of it to North America, in return for the beef, pork, cheese, corn, pease, staves, plank, pitch and tar, which they have from thence. 2. Rum, of which they export

Spai about

abou illan the whi for disti their of v indi inco

> to t two hom ging fwee plan artic

are

efted

cont for i logv they neg good

B terb con

our' we

iptible. a. from much nd mebreeds whofe g; the inners: s, and **fupply** parilla, e aloes plant. art of te fuitmuch o, and

ifland
ft, futwenhogreight,
ngland
of of
fome
rn for
ftaves,
from
xport
about

all the

SETTLEMENTS in AMERICA. about 4000 puncheons. The rum of this island is generally esteemed the best, and is 3. Molasses. in the most used in England. which they make a great part of their returns for New England, where there are vast distilleries. All these are the produce of their grand staple the sugar cane. 4. Cotton, of which they fend out 2000 bags. indigo, formerly much cultivated, is now inconsiderable, but some cacao and coffee are exported, which latter is in no great esteem; though it is said to be little inferior to that of Mocha, provided it be kept for two or three years. With these they send home a confiderable quantity of piemento, ginger, drugs for dyers and apothecaries, fweetmeats, and mahogany and manchineel But some of the most considerable articles of their trade are with the Spanish continent of New Spain and Terra Firma; for in the former they cut great quantities of logwood, and both in the former and latter they drive a vast and profitable trade in negroes, and all kinds of the fame European goods which are carried thither from Old Spain by the flota.

Both the logwood trade and this counterband have been the subjects of much contention, and the cause of a war between our's and the Spanish nation. The former we avow, and we claim it as our right;

though

though in the last treaty of peace, that point was far from being well settled. The latter we permit; because we think, and very justly, that if the Spaniards find themselves aggrieved by any counterband trade, it lies upon them, and not upon us, to put a stop to it.

Formerly we cut logwood in the bay of Campeachy on the northern fide of the peninfula of Jucatan. But the Spaniards have driven our people entirely from thence, and built forts and made settlements to prevent them from returning. Expelled from thence, the logwood cutters fettled upon the gulph of Honduras on the fouthern fide of the fame peninfula, where they are in some fort established, and have a fort to protect them. They are an odd kind of people, composed mostly of vagabonds and fugitives from all parts of North America, and their way of They live pretty much in a life is fuitable. lawless manner, though they elect one amongst them whom they call their king; and to him they pay as much obedience as they think fit. The country they are in is low, and extremely marshy; the air is prodigiously molested with muskettoes; and the water dangerous with alligators; yet a life of licentiousness, a plenty of brandy, large gains, and a want of thought, have perfectly reconciled them to the hardships of their employment, and the unwholfomeness

unw alwa fand

logy into whi fore: Wh cour kno is a Hoy dive carr the Barc ship

trad had on that and that ed a deti-

167

fion

at point ie latter d very mselves it lies t a stop

bay of he pends have ce, and prevent thence, ulph of e same rt esta-

them. mpofed rom all way of ch in a mongst to him iink fit. tremeolested

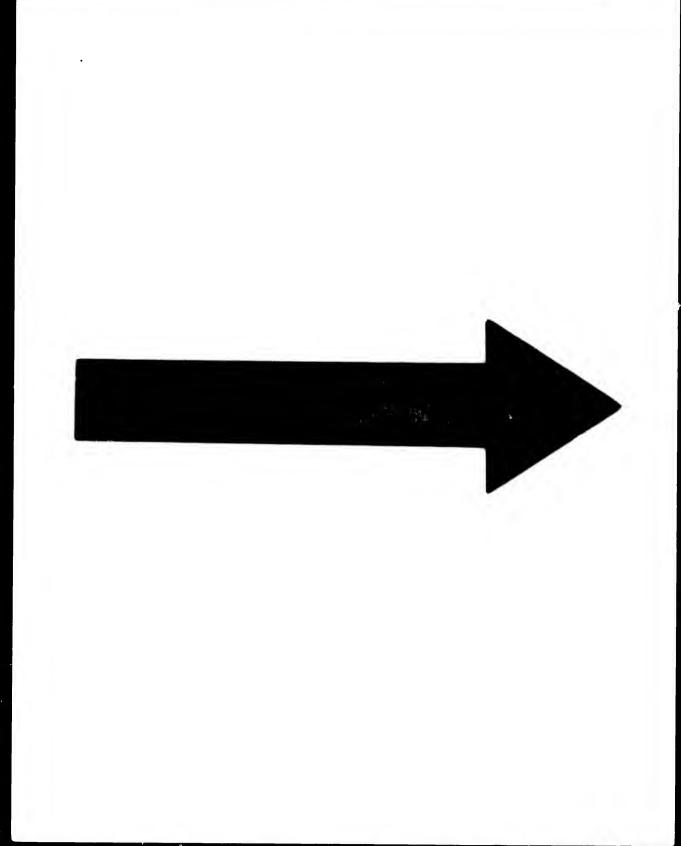
ngerous oulnels, a want hem to nd the meness

unwholfomeness of the climate. They go always well armed, and are about one thoufand five hundred men.

In the dry feason, when they cut the logwood, they advance a confiderable way into the country, following the logwood, which runs amongst the other trees of the forest, like the vein of a mineral in the earth. When the rains have overflowed the whole country, they have marks by which they know where the logwood is deposited. This is an heavy wood, and finks in the water. However, it is easily buoyed up, and one diver can lift very large beams. These they carry by the favour of the land-floods into the river, to a place which is called the Barcaderas or Port, where they meet the ships that come upon this trade.

In the year 1716, when the debate concerning this matter was revived; the lords of trade reported, that before the year 1676 we had a number of people fettled and carrying on this trade on the peninsula of Jucatan; that we always considered this as our right, and were supported in it by our kings; and that this right was confirmed, if it had wanted any confirmation, by a clause of uti possidetis in the treaty of peace which was concluded with Spain and the court of London in 1676, and that we certainly were in full possesfion of those settlements and that trade, long

before



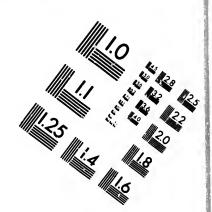
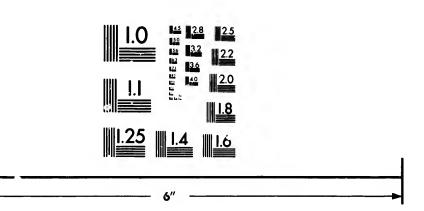


IMAGE EVALUATION TEST TARGET (MT-3)



Photographic Sciences Corporation

23 WEST MAIN STREET WEBSTER, N.Y. 14580 (716) 872-4503



before the time of that treaty; and further, that the Spaniards themselves have incidentally drawn a great advantage from it, fince the pirates, who were formerly the most resolved and effectual enemies they ever had, were the more easily restrained from their enterprizes, by having their minds diverted to this employment. Upon the whole, they concluded it an affair very well worth the attention of the government, as in some years it employed near fix thousand tuns of shipping; found employment for a number of feamen proportionable; confumed a good deal of our manufactures, and was of confiderable use in fabricating many others; and that the whole value of the returns were not less than fixty thousand pounds sterling a year. standing this, our claim feems dropped, nor is it very clear how far it can be maintained, to carry on a trade by violence in a country, in which we can hardly claim, according to the common ideas of right in America, any However this may be, the trade, property. though with many difficulties and discouragements, still continues, and will probably continue whilst the Spaniards are so weak upon that fide of Mexico, and while the coast continues so disagreeable, that none but desperate persons will venture to reside there. The logwood trade is generally carried on by veffels from New England, New York, and Penfylvania, Pen in J

carr

conf

too twee yet to t Span prof the low perl man take

abo wh ash tice nev

goo

har

Par dife cov

fre Spa mo

pac

in Jamaica.

But there is a trade yet more profitable carried on between this island and the Spanish continent, especially in time of war, too has been the cause of much bickering between us and the court of Spain, and it will vet be more difficult for them to put a stop to this trade than to the former, whilst the Spaniards are so eager for it, whilst it is so profitable to the Bridth merchant, and whilst the Spanish officers from the highest to the lowest shew so great a respect to presents properly made. The trade is carried on in this The ship from Jamaica having taken in negroes, and a proper fortment of goods there, proceeds in time of peace to a harbour called the Grout within Monkey-key, about four miles from Porto-bello. A person who understands Spanish, is directly sent ashore to give the merchants of the town notice of the arrival of the vessel; the same news is carried likewise with great speed to Panama; from whence the merchants fet out disguised like peasants with their silver in jars covered with meal, to deceive the officers of the revenue. Here the ship remains trading frequently for five or fix weeks together. The Spaniards usually come on board, leave their money, and take their negroes, and their goo ls packed up in parcels fit for one man to carry, after

her, that dentally nce the

refolved d, were enter-

to this ey cone atten-

vears it ipping; feamen

l of our e use in

e whole an fixty otwith-

ed, nor ntained, country,

rding to ica, any

e trade, ourageoly con-

ik upon ast con-

t despee. The by vef-

k, and ylvania,

after having been handsomely entertained on board, and receiving provisions sufficient for their journey homeward. If the whole cargo is not disposed of here, they bear off eastward to the Brew, a harbour about five miles distant from Carthagena, where they foon find a vent for the rest. There is no trade more profitable than this; for your payments are made in ready money; and the goods fell higher than they would at any other market. It is not on this coast only, but every where upon the Spanish main, that this trade is carried on; nor is it by the English only, but the French from Hispaniola, the Dutch from Curaffou, and even the Danes have some share in it. When the Spanish guarda costas seize upon one of these vessels, they make no scruple of confiscating the cargo, and of treating the crew in a manner little better than pirates.

This commerce in time of peace, and this with the prizes that are made in time of war, pour into Jamaica an astonishing quantity of treasure; great fortunes are made in a manner instantly, whilst the people appear to live in such a state of luxury as in all other places leads to beggary. Their equipages, their cloaths, their furniture, their tables, all bear the tokens of the greatest wealth and profusion imaginable; this obliges all the treasure they receive, to make but a very short stay, as

all

all the to lux the is for of ftar apie

Por

each and nifte of t a lo the

bour coul and key ined on ient for le cargo astward s distant find a e more ents are ods fell market. where trade is h only, e Dutch es have guarda ls, they

and this
of war,
ntity of
manner
o live in
c places
c, their
all bear
profutreasure
stay, as
all

e cargo,

er little

SETTLEMENTS in AMERICA. 79 all this treasure added to all the products of the island itself, is hardly more than sufficient to answer the calls of their necessity and luxury on Europe and North America, and their demand for slaves, of which this island is under the necessity of an annual recruit for its own use and that of the Spanish trade, of upwards of six thousand head, and which stand them one with another in thirty pounds apiece, and often more.

CHAP. IV.

Port-Royal. The earthquake 1692. Kingfton. St. Jago de la Vega, or Spanishtown. Disputes about the removal of the seat of government.

THE whole island is divided into nineteen districts or parishes, which send each of them two members to the assembly, and allow a competent maintenance to a minister. Port-Royal was anciently the capital of the island; it stood upon the very point of a long narrow neck of land, which towards the sea formed part of the border of a very noble harbour of its own name. In this harbour above a thousand sail of the largest ships could anchor with the greatest convenience and safety; and the water was so deep at the key of Port-Royal, that vessels of the greatest burthen

burthen could lay their broadfides to the wharfs, and load and unload at little expence This conveniency weighed for or trouble. much with the inhabitants, that they chose in this spot to build their capital, though the place was an hot dry fand, which produced not one of the necessaries of life, no not even fresh water. However, this advantageous situation, and the refort of the pirates, foon made it a very confiderable place. It contained two thousand houses very handsomely built, and which rented as high as those in London. had a refort like a constant fair, by the great concourse of people of business, and grew to all this in about thirty years time; for before that there was scarcely an house upon the place. In short, there were very few places in the world, which for the fize could be compared to this town for trade, wealth, and an entire corruption of manners.

It continued thus until the 9th of June 1692, when an earthquake, which shook the whole island to its foundations, overwhelmed this city, and buried nine tenths of it eight fathom under water. This earthquake not only demolished this city, but made a terrible devastation all over the island, and was followed by a contagious distemper, which was near giving the last hand to its ruin. Ever since, it is remarked, that the air is far more unwholsome than formerly.

This

n oi to

la

it

Ca

dı

W

VC

th

th he

ha of

ft

fre

tic

This earthquake, one of the most dreadful that I think ever was known, is described in such lively colours in the Philosophical transactions, and by persons who saw and had a large part in the terrors and losses of this calamity, that I shall say nothing of it, but refer thither; as I am certain no man from his fancy, could assemble a greater number of images of horror, than the nature of things, taught the persons who saw them, to bring together, and which are there relat-

ed very naturally and pathetically.

They rebuilt this city after the earthquake, but it was again destroyed. A terrible fire laid it in ashes about ten years after. Notwithstanding this, the extraordinary convenience of the harbour tempted them to rebuild it once more. But in the year 1722 a hurricane, one of the most terrible on record, reduced it a third time to a heap of rubbish. Warned by these extraordinary calamities, that seemed to mark out this place as a devoted spot, by an act of assembly they removed the custom-house and public offices from thence, and forbid that any market should be held there for the future. The principal inhabitants came to reside at the opposite side of the bay, at a place which is called Kingston. The town is commodicusly situated for fresh water, and all manner of accommoda-The streets are of a commodious Vol. II. wideness,

brmerly. This

to the

xpence

hed fo

chose

igh the

oduced ot even

eous fi-

on made

ned two

ilt, and

on. It

e great

grew to

before

oon the

w places

ould be

Ith, and

of June

h shook

o, overe tenths

is earth-

ity, but

e island,

stemper,

hand to

that the

wideness, regularly drawn, and cutting each other at equal distances and right angles. It consists of upwards of one thousand houses, many of them handsomely built, though low, with porticoes, and every conveniency for a comfortable habitation in that climate. The harbour was formerly in no good posture of defence, but by the care of the late governor Mr. Knowles, it is now strongly fortified.

The river Cobre, a considerable, but not navigable stream, falls into the sea not far from Kingston. Upon the banks of this river stands St. Jago de la Vega, or Spanish-town; the feat of government, and the place where the courts of justice are held, and consequently the capital of Jamaica, though inferior in fize and refort to Kingston. However, this, tho' a town of less business, has more gaiety. Here reside many persons of large fortunes, and who make a figure proportionable; the number of coaches kept here is very great; here is a regular affembly; and the residence of the governor and the principal officers of the government, who have all very profitable places, conspire with the genius of the inhabitants, oftentatious and expensive, to make it a very splendid and agreeable place. Mr. Knowles, the late governor, made an attempt to remove the feat of government from hence to Kingston, for reasons which, it must be owned, have a very plaufible appearance; for it would certainly

h vo do do vi th ch or of

ag

mo Or

100

tá

the ver nat flan wh

flan

pen upo pler all f

that The dred gove

othe who

tainly facilitate the carrying on of business, to have the courts of justice and the seat of government as near as possible to the center of commercial affairs. But whether the confideration of a more healthful fituation; the division of the advantages of great towns with the feveral parts of the country, and the mischiefs that might arise from shaking the settled order of things, and prejudicing the property of a great many private people, can weigh against the advantages proposed by this removal, I will not undertake to determine. One thing appears I think very plainly in the contest which this regulation produced; that the opposition was at least as much to the governor as to the measure; and that great natural warmth of temper upon all fides, enflamed and envenomed by a spirit of party which reigns in all our plantations, kindled a flame about this, which, if it had not happened, must have risen to the same height upon fome other occasion, since there was a plenty of combustible materials ready upon all fides.

The government of this island is, next to that of Ireland, the best in the king's gift. The standing salary is two thousand five hundred pounds a year. The affembly vote the governor as much more; and this, with the other great profits of his office, make it in the whole little inferior to ten thousand pounds a

vear.

g each es. It houses, h low, y for a The ture of overnor d. out not far from r stands vn; the ere the quently r in fize his, tho' Here es, and he numhere is e of the the goe places, abitants, t a very Incwles, remove ingston, have a ald cer-

tainly

84 An ACCOUNT of the EUROPEAN year. But of the government I shall say little, until I speak of the government of the rest of the plantations, to which this is in all respects alike.

CHAP. V.

Barbadoes. Its savage condition at the first planting. The bardships suffered by the planters. The speedy increase of the island. Its great wealth and number of inhabitants. Its decline. Present state of the island.

it ar

ca

an

m

th

m

cu

th

lifi

the

wi

ab)

COL

dif

the

gat

OVC

HE next island, in point of importance, which we pusses in the West-Indies, but the oldest in point of settlement, is Barbadoes. This is one, and by no means the most contemptible one amongst the Windward division of the Caribbee islands. It is not distinctly known when this island was first discovered or settled; but it was probably some time about the year 1625.

When the English first landed here, they found the place the most savage and destitute that can well be imagined. It had not the least appearance of ever having been peopled even by savages. There was no kind of beast of pasture or of prey, no fruit, no herb, nor root sit for supporting the life of man. Yet as the climate was good, and the soil appeared fertile, some gentlemen of small fortunes

the first by the e island.

pabitants.

f imporne Westttlement, no means ngst the e islands. nis island t it was

defeitute
I not the
n peopled
kind of
no herb,
of man.
the foil
of fmall
fortunes

SETTLEMEN'S in AMERICA. fortunes in England resolved to become adventurers thither. But the first planters had not only the utter desolateness of the place, and the extreme want of provisions to struggle with, but the trees were so large, of a wood fo hard and stubborn, and full of fuch great branches, that they proceeded in the clearing of the ground with a difficulty that must have worn down any ordinary patience. And even when they had tolerably cleared some little spot, the first produce it yielded for their sublistence was so small and ordinary, at the same time that their fupplies from England were fo flow and precarious, that nothing but the noblest courage, and a firmness which cannot receive too many praifes, could have carried them through the discouragements which they met in the noblest work in the world, the cultivating and peopling a deserted part of the globe. But by degrees things were mollified; some of the trees yielded fustic for the dyers; cotton and indigo agreed well with the foil; tobacco then becoming fashionable in England answered tolerably; and the country began gradually to lay aside its savage disposition and to submit to culture.

These good appearances in America, and the storm which some time after began to gather in England, encouraged many to go over; but still the colony received no sort of

G 3 encouragement

encouragement from the government, which at that time understood the advantages of colonies but little; and which was besides much worse occupied in sowing those seeds of bitterness, which came afterwards so terribly to their own lips. The court took no other notice of this island than to grant it to a very unworthy and unfaithful favourite, the earl of Carlisse; which, as may be judged, proved

of no advantage to the settlement.

However, as this colony had the hardiest breeding, and the most laborious infancy of any of our fettlements, so it was far stronger in its stamina, and grew with greater speed; and that to an height, which if it were not proved beyond any reasonable doubt, could scarcely be For in this small island, which is but twenty-five miles in length, and in breadth but fourteen, in little more than twenty years after its first settlement, that is, in 1650, it contained upwards of fifty thousand whites of all fexes and ages, and a much greater number of blacks and Indian flaves. The former of which flaves they bought; the latter they acquired by means not at all to their honour; for they feized upon those unhappy men without any pretence, in the neighbouring islands, and carried them into flavery. A practice which has rendered the Caribbee Indians irreconcileable to us ever fince.

This

m al

fo

de

co

cr

of

or

fti

gı

of

er ar which is of coes much is of bitrribly to o other o a very the earl proved

hardiest fancy of onger in ed; and t proved rcely be vhich is breadth ty years 1650, it vhites of number rmer of hey acour; for without nds, and which irrecon-

This

This small island, peopled by upwards of one hundred thousand souls, was not yet above half of it cultivated, nor was the industry of the inhabitants at a stand. A little before the period I have mentioned, they learned the method of making sugar; and this enlarging the sphere of their trade, they grew prodigiously rich and numerous.

About this time the government in England, which was then in the hands of Croinwell, confined the trade of Barbadoes to the mother country; before it had been managed altogether by the Dutch. The rigour exercifed towards the royal party, obliged several gentlemen of very good families to fettle in this island, which was far from being peopled like fome other colonies, by fugitives and persons desperate at home. After the restoration it continued still to advance by very hasty strides, Not long after the restoration, king Charles created thirteen baronets from the gentlemen of this island, some of whom were worth ten thousand pounds a year, and none so little as one thousand.

In 1676, which was the meridian of this fettlement, their whites were computed to be still much about fifty thousand, but their negroe slaves were increased so as to be upwards of one hundred thousand of all kinds. They employed four hundred sail of ships, one with another of an hundred and fifty tuns, in their

G 4 trade,

trade; their annual exported produce in fugar, indigo, ginger, cotton, &c. amounted to upwards of three hundred and fifty thousand pounds, and their circulating cash at home was two hundred thousand. It is probable that Holland itself, or perhaps even the best inhabited parts of China were never peopled to the same proportion, nor have they land of the fame dimensions, which produces any thing like the same profits. But since that time the island has been much upon the The growth of the French fugar islands, and the settlement of Antegua, St. Christopher's, Nevis, and Montserrat, as well as the greater establishment in Jamaica, have drawn away from time to time a yast number of their people. A terrible contagion, said to be brought over by the troops from England, but more probably derived from the coast of Africa, attacked the island in the year 1692; it raged like a pestilence; twenty have died in a day in their principal town; and all parts of the island suffered in proportion. fickness continued, with some abatements, for feveral years, and left an ill disposition in the climate ever afterwards. War raged at the same time with this distemper; and the Barbadians who raised a good number of men, lost many of them in fruitless expeditions against the French islands. The land too began not to yield quite fo kindly as it formerly had

ge tec cel of oth at five fan the of run imm not fan returned.

mer regi com the fo a On the

whi The

it at

SETTLEMENTS in AMERICA.

in fu-

nted to

ousand home

robable

he best

peopled land of

es any

ce that on the

n fugar

ua, St.

as well a, have

number

faid to ngland,

coast of

1692;

died in

ll parts

nts, for

in the

at the he Bar-

f men,

ditions

too be-

rmerly

had

This

had done, and in some places they were obliged to manure it. All these causes contributed to reduce the numbers and opulence of this celebrated island. But it is only in comparison of itself, that it may be considered in any other than the most flourishing condition even at this day; for at this day it contains twentyfive thousand whites, very near eighty thoufand negroes, and it ships above twenty-five thousand hogsheads of sugar, to the value of three hundred thousand pounds, besides rum, molasses, cotton, ginger, and aloes; an immense peopling and produce for a country not containing more than one hundred thoufand acres of land. By the rife of fugars, the returns of this island are little less than they were in its most flourishing times.

This island can raise near five thousand men of its own militia, and it has generally a regiment of regular troops, though not very It is fortified by nature all along compleat. the windward shore by the rocks and shoals, so as to be near two thirds utterly inaccessible. On the leeward fide it has good harbours; but the whole coast is protected by a line of several miles in length, and several forts to defend

it at the most material places.

They support their own establishment, which is very confiderable, with great credit. The governor's place is worth at least five thousand pounds a year, and the rest of their officers

An Account of the European 90 officers have valuable places. They provide very handsomely for their clergy, who are of the church of England, which is the religion established here, as it is in the other islands. Here are very few diffenters. There is in general an appearance of fomething more of order and decency, and of a fettled people, than in any other colony in the West-Indies. They have here a college, founded and well endowed by the virtue and liberality of that great man colonel Christopher Codrington, who was a native of this island, and who for a great number of amiable and useful qualities both in public and private life, for his courage, and his zeal for the good of his country, his humanity, his knowledge and love of literature, was far the richest production and most shining ornament this island ever had.

This college does not fo fully answer the intentions of the excellent founder, as it might If the fund was applied to the education of a number of catechifts for the instruction of the negroes, some of them of their own colour, it would be a vast public advantage, besides the charity, or perhaps the indispensible duty

This college is in Bridge-town, the capital of this island, which before the late fire contained about twelve hundred houses, very handfomely built and inhabited by a numerous and wealthy people. The country of Barbadoes

of fome fuch work.

rif

m

th

me

for

giv

in

in

the

wh

St.

the

the

afte

us l

provide ho are of religion r islands. e is in gemore of l people,

ft-Indies. and well y of that

who for l qualities

drington,

his coucountry,

e of literaand mcft

nswer the s it might education ruction of vn colour, e, besides

fible duty

he capital e containry handhumerous of Barbadoes

does has a most beautiful appearance, swelling here and there into gentle hills; shining by the cultivation of every part, by the verdure of the sugar canes, the bloom and fragrance of the number of orange, lemon, lime and citron trees, the guavas, papas, aloes, and a vast multitude of other elegant and useful plants, that rise intermix'd with the houses of the gentlemen which are fown thickly on every part of the island. Even the negroe huts, though mean, contribute to the beauty of the country; for they shade them with plantain trees, which give their villages the appearance of so many beautiful groves. In short, there is no place in the West-Indies comparable to Barbadoes, in point of numbers of people, cultivation of the foil, and those elegancies and conveniencies which refult from both.

CHAP. VI.

St. Christopher, Antegua, Nevis, Montserrat; their present condition and force.

THE island of St. Christopher's is the chief of those which we possess amongst the Leeward islands. It was first settled by the French and English in the year 1626, but after various fortunes it was entirely ceded to us by the treaty of Utrecht. This island is about

An ACCOUNT of the EUROPEAN 92 about feventy-five miles in compass. The circuit of Antegua is but little inferior. and Montserrat are the smallest of the four, not exceeding for either of them, about eighteen or twenty miles in circumference. foil in all these islands is pretty much alike; light and sandy, but notwithstanding fertile in an high degree. Antegua has no rivulets of fresh water, and but very few springs; this made it be deemed uninhabitable for a long time; but now they fave the rains in ponds and cisterns with great care, and they are rarely in great distress for water. In a word, this island, which we formerly thought useless, has got the start of all the Leeward islands, increaing every day in its produce and inhabitants both freemen and flaves. It has one of the best harbours in the West-Indies; on it stands the principal town called St. John's, which is large and wealthy.

N fiv of the re-

fin

w

th

fay

Er

rai

bo

dri

on

nei

iſla

po:

dre

ha

of

ind

afl

The island of St. Christopher's is not so much on the increase. Neither that, nor any of the Leeward islands, yields any commodity of consequence but what is derived from the cane, except Montserrat, which exports some

indigo, but of a very inferior kind.

It is judged that the island of St. Christopher's contains about seven thousand whites, and twenty thousand negroes; that Antegua has also about seven thousand of the former colour, and thirty thousand blacks; and that Nevis

The Nevis the four, ut eighe. The h alike; fertile in ivulets of igs; this ora long onds and re rarely ord, this eless, has , increahabitants

which is s not fo nor any mmodity from the

rts fome

ne of the

it stands

Christol whites, Antegua former and that Nevis Nevis and Montserrat may have each about five thousand Europeans, who are the masters of ten or twelve thousand African slaves. that the whole of the Leeward islands may be reckoned without exaggeration to maintain about twenty thousand English, of whom every fingle man gives bread to several in England, which is effected by the labour of near feventy thousand negroes. Of the island of Barbuda, I fay little, because it has no direct trade with England. It is employed in husbandry, and raising fresh provisions for the use of the neighbouring colonies. It is the property of the Codrington family.

These islands are under the management of one governor, who has the title of captain general and governor in chief of all the Caribbee islands from Guardaloupe to Porto Rico. His post is worth about three thousand five hundred pounds a year. Under him each island has its particular deputy governor at a falary of two hundred pounds a year, and its separate, independent legislative of a council, and an

assembly of the representatives.

CHAP.

CHAP. VII.

Climate of the West-Indies. The rains and winds. Hurricanes. Their prognostics. Produce of the West-Indies. Sugar. The manner of manufacturing it. Planters in the West-Indies. Their way of life and management of their affairs. The negroes.

HE climate in all our West-India islands is nearly the same, allowing for those accidental differences which the feveral fituations, and qualities of the lands themselves pro-As they lie within the tropic, and that the fun goes quite over their heads, paffing beyond them to the North, and never retires further from any of them than about 30 degrees to the South, they are continually subjected to the extreme of an heat, which would be intolerable, if the trade wind rifing gradually as the fun gathers strength, did not blow in upon them from the sea, and refresh the air in fuch a manner as to enable them to attend their concerns even under the meridian On the other hand, as the night advances, a breeze begins to be perceived, which blows finartly from the land, as it were from its center, towards the sea, to all points of the compass at once.

By

dif ma Ca dra fhio vin cou con

ary

mea vieff are clou vers are cour river

feafor their imag contireafor the la

pics,

within the g

fons i

ins and
is. Probe mans in the
manage-

ia islands those acal fitualves proand that paffing er retires 30 delly fubch would g graduot blow resh the m to atmeridian t advanwhich ere from s of the By the same remarkable providence in the disposing of things it is, that when the sun has made a great progress towards the tropic of Cancer, and becomes in a manner vertical, he draws after him such a vast body of clouds, as shield them from his direct beams, and dissolving into rain cool the air, and refresh the country, thirsty with the long drought, which commonly reigns from the beginning of January to the latter end of May.

The rains in the West-Indies are by no means the things they are with us. Our heaviest rains are but dews comparatively. are rather floods of water poured from the clouds, with a prodigious impetuofity; the rivers rise in a moment; new rivers and lakes are formed, and in a short time all the low country is under water. Hence it is, that the rivers which have their fource within the tropics, fwell and overflow their banks at a certain season; and so mistaken were the ancients in their idea of the torrid zone, which they imagined to be dried and scorched up with a continual and fervent heat, and to be for that reason uninhabitable; when in reality some of the largest rivers in the world have their course within its limits, and the moisture is one of the greatest inconveniencies of the climate in feveral places.

The rains make the only distinction of seasons in the West-Indies; the trees are green the

By

96 An Account of the European

the whole year round; they have no cold, no frosts, no snows, and but rarely some hail; the storms of hail are however very violent when they happen, and the hailstones very great and heavy. Whether it be owing to this moisture alone, which alone does not seem to be a sufficient cause, or to a greater quantity of a sulphurous acid, which predominates in the air in this country, metals of all kinds that are subject to the action of such causes, rust and canker in a very short time; and this cause, perhaps, as much as the heat itself, contributes to make the climate of the West-Indies unfriendly and unpleasant to an European constitution.

It is in the rainy season (principally in the month of August, more rarely in July and September,) that they are affaulted by hurricanes; the most terrible calamity to which they are subject from the climate; this destoys at a froke the labours of many years, and proftrates the most exalted hopes of the planter, and often just at the moment when he thinks himself out of the reach of fortune. It is a fudden and violent storm of wind, rain, thunder and lightening, attended with a furious swelling of the seas, and sometimes with an earthquake; in short, with every circumstance which the elements can affemble, that is terrible and First, they see, as the prelude to destructive. the ensuing havock, whole fields of sugar canes whirled into the air, and fcattered over

the of tabo awa the vera groware blaffive ble

iflan prog The ters, it co the you obse you clear ly h earth ruml wind

than

the I

look

into

wind

cold, no hail; the ent when great and moisture be a fuffiof a fulthe air in are subject and canker, perhaps, es to make endly and

ion. ally in the July and by hurriwhich they estoys at a l prostrates er, and of nks him-It is a fud-, thunder us fwelling arthquake; which the rrible and prelude to of fugar tered over the face of the country. The strongest trees of the forest are torn up by the roots, and driven about like stubble; their windmills are swept away in a moment; their works, the fixtures, the ponderous copper boilers, and stills of several hundred weight, are wrenched from the ground, and battered to pieces: their houses are no protection, the roofs are torn off at one blast; whilst the rain, which is an hour rises sive feet, rushes in upon them with an irresistible violence.

There are figns, which the Indians of these islands taught our planters, by which they can prognosticate the approach of an hurricane. The hurricane comes on either in the quarters, or at the full change of the moon. it comes at the full moon, when you are at the change observe these signs. That day you will see the sky very turbulent; you will observe the sun more red than at other times; you will perceive a dead calm, and the hills clear of all those clouds and mists which usually hover about them. In the clefts of the earth, and in the wells, you hear a hollow rumbling found like the rushing of a great wind. At night the stars feem much larger than usual, and surrounded with a fort of burs; the North-west sky has a black and menacing look; the sea emits a strong smell, and rises into vast waves, often without any wind; the wind itself now forfakes its usual steady Easter-Vol. II.

ly stream, and shifts about to the West; from whence it fometimes blows with intermissions violently and irregularly for about two hours at a time. You have the fame figns at the full of the moon; the moon herself is surrounded with a great bur, and sometimes the sun has the same appearance. These prognostics were taught by the Indians; and in general one may observe, that ignorant country people and barbarous nations, are better observers of times and feafons, and draw better rules from them, than more civilized and reasoning people, for they rely more upon experience than theories, they are more careful of traditionary observations, and living more in the open air at all times, and not so occupied but they have leisure to observe every change, though minute, in that element, they come to have great treasures of useful matter, though, as it might be expected, mixed with many fuperstitious and idle notions as to the causes. These make their observations to be rejected as chimerical in the gross by many literati, who are not near so nice and circumspect as they ought to be in distinguishing what this fort of people may be very competent judges of, and what not.

The grand staple commounty of the West-Indies is fugar; this commodity was not at all known to the Greeks and Romans, though it was made in China in very early times, from

whence

w the in . of Eu froi nati Por ca; gini the part the

of jo

the d

and

vivid

conta

most

natu extre T the r of th well joints above the e regul

a sho

ty joi

whence we had the first knowledge of it; but the Portuguese were the first who cultivated it in America, and brought it into request as one of the materials of a very universal luxury in Europe. It is not fettled whether the cane from which this substance is extracted, be a native of America or brought thither by the Portuguese from India, and the coast of Africa; but however the matter may be, in the beginning they made the most as they still do the best sugars, which come to market in this The fugar cane grows to part of the world. the height of between fix and eight feet, full of joints, about four or five inches afunder; the colour of the body of the cane is yellowish, and the top, where it shoots into leaves of a vivid green; the coat is pretty hard, and within contains a spungy substance full of a juice, the most lively, elegant, and least cloying sweet in nature; and which sucked raw, has proved extremly nutritive and wholfome.

They are cultivated in this manner. In the month of August, that is, in the rainy part of the year, after the ground is cleared and well hoed, they lay a piece of six or seven joints of the cane, slat in a channel made for it, above half a foot deep; this they cover with the earth, and so plant the whole sield in lines regularly disposed and at proper distances. In a short time a young cane shoots out from every joint of the stock which was interred; and

H 2

grows

Westot at all lough it s, from whence

; from

nistions

hours

at the

urroun-

the fun

gnostics

general

y people

bservers

er rules

easoning

perience

of tradi-

e in the

pied but

change,

come to

though,

nany fu-

causes.

rejected

literati,

hspect as

hat this

: judges

An ACCOUNT of the EUROPEAN grows in twelve days to be a pretty tall and vigorous plant; but it is not until after fixteen months, or thereabouts, that the canes are fit to answer the purposes of the planter, though they may remain a few months after without any confiderable prejudice to him. The longer they remain in the ground after they are come to maturity, the less juice they afford; but this is somewhat compensated by the supe-That no time may rior richness of the juice. be loft, they generally divide their cane grounds into three parts. One is of standing canes, and to be cut that feason; the second is of new planted canes; and the third is fallow, ready to receive a fresh supply. In some places they make fecond and third cuttings from the fame root. The tops of the canes, and the leaves which grow upon the joints, make very good provender for their cattle, and the refuse of the cane after grinding, serves for fire; so that no part of this excellent plant is without its use.

The canes are cut with a billet, and carried in bundles to the mill, which is now generally a windmill; it turns three great cylinders or rollers plated with iron fet perpendicularly and cogged so as to be all moved by the middle roller. Between these the canes are bruifed to pieces, and the juice runs through an hole into a vat which is placed under the rollers to receive it; from hence it is carried

through

th ho fer by it i ma du it i boi and of con carr they the to ra men over thro men two great and lates

T fashi consi put a itself or tre

whic

and vifixteen are fit though without The lonthey are afford; he supeme may eir cane **standing** second is is fallow, ne places from the , and the s, make and the erves for t plant is

d carried generalcylinders dicularly the midare bruirough an nder the s carried through

101 through a pipe into a great reservoir, in which however, for fear of turning four, it is not fuffered to rest long; but is conveyed out of that by other pipes into the boiling house, where it is received by a large cauldron: here it remains, until the four which constantly arises during the boiling, is all taken off; from this, it is passed successively into five or six more boilers, gradually diminishing in their size, and treated in the same manner. In the last of these it becomes of a very thick clammy confistence; but mere boiling is incapable of carrying it farther: to advance the operation, they pour in a small quantity of lime-water; the immediate effect of this alien mixture, is to raise up the liquor in a very vehement fermentation; but to prevent it from running over, a bit of butter no larger than a nut is thrown in, upon which the fury of the fermentation immediately subsides; a vessel of two or three hundred gallons requires no greater force to quiet it. It is now taken out and placed in a cooler, where it dries, granulates, and becomes fit to be put into the pots, which is the last part of the operation.

The pots are conical, or of a fugar-loaf fashion; open at the point, which must be considered as their bottom; here a strainer is put across. In these pots the sugar purges itself of its remaining impurity; the molasses or treacly part disentangles itself from the rest;

 H_3

precipitates

102 An ACCOUNT of the EUROPEAN

precipitates and runs out of the aperture at the bottom; it is now in the condition called muscavado sugar, of a yellowish brown colour, and thus it is generally put into the hogshead and

shipped off.

But when they have a mind to refine it yet further, and leave no remains at all of the molasses, they cover the pots I have just mentioned with a fort of white clay, like that used for tobacco pipes, diluted with water; this penetrates the fugar, unites with the molasses, and with them runs off, leaving the fugar of a whitish colour, but whitest at top. called clayed fugar; the operation is fometimes repeated once or twice more, and the fugar every time diminishing in quantity gains considerably in value; but still is called clayed Further than this they do not go in the plantations, because an heavy duty of sixteen shillings per hundred weight is laid upon all sugars refined there; it is therefore not to my purpose to carry the account any further.

Of the molasses rum is made, in a manner that needs no description, since it differs in nothing from the manner of distilling any other spirit. From the scummings of the sugar, a meaner spirit is procured. Rum finds its market in North America, (where it is consumed by the English inhabitants, or employed in the Indian trade, or distributed from thence to the sishery of Newsoundland, and the Africa

can

cai

lan

qu

to

ma

ges

clea

hav

ima

We

the

artic

ing

fubf

will

tatio

purc

unde

Neit

ness

watc

over

ing 1

affair

and

conf

trem

herc

cane

ne it yet l of the ust menthat used ter; this molasses, ugar of a

re at the

ed mus-

our, and

nead and

This is ometimes the fugar ins consid clayed not go in y of fixlaid upon re not to further. manner rs in no-

: fugar, a its maronfumed ployed in h thence

ny other

he African SETTLEMENTS in AMERICA.

can commerce;) besides what comes to England and Ireland. However, a very great quantity of molasses is taken off raw and carried

to New England to be distilled there.

They compute that when things are well managed, the rum and molasses pay the charges of the plantation, and that the fugars are However, by the particulars we clear gain. have feen, and by others which we may eafily imagine, the expences of a plantation in the West-Indies are very great, and the profits at the first view precarious; for the chargeable articles of the windmill, the boiling, cooling and distilling houses, and the buying and subsisting a suitable number of slaves and cattle, will not fuffer any man to begin a fugar plantation of any confequence, not to mention the purchase of the land, which is very high, under a capital of at least five thousand pounds. Neither is the life of a planter, a life of idleness and luxury; at all times he must keep a watchful eye upon his overseers, and even oversee himself occasionly. But at the boiling feason, if he is properly attentive to his affairs, no way of life can be more laborious, and more dangerous to the health; from a conflant attendance day and night in the extreme united heats of the climate and so many fierce furnaces; add to this the losses by hurricanes, earthquakes, and bad featons; and then confider. H 4

104 An ACCOUNT of the EUROPEAN

confider, when the sugars are in the cask, that he quits the hazard of a planter, to engage in the hazards of a merchant, and ships his produce at his own risk. The sum of all might make one believe, that it could never answer to engage in this business; but notwithstanding all this, there are no parts of the world, in which great estates are made in so short a time as in the West-Indies. The produce of a few good seasons will provide against the ill effects of the worst; as the planter is sure of a speedy and profitable market for his produce, which has a readier sale than perhaps any other commodity in the world.

Large plantations are generally under the care of a manager or chief overfeer, who has commonly a falary of a hundred and fifty pounds a year, with overfeers under him in proportion to the greatness of the plantation, one to about thirty negroes, and at the rate of about forty pounds. Such plantations too have a furgeon at a fixed falary, employed to take care of the negroes which belong to it. the course, which is the least troublesome to the owner of the estate, is to let the land with all the works, and the stock of cattle and slaves, to a tenant, who gives security for the payment of the rent, and the keeping up repairs and the stock. The estate is generally estimated to fuch a tenant at half the neat produce of the best

be fru fel

at a ing lan Sat fub neg Gu ring a di a ca fhoo a y

ferenu and of treach large han layer

k, that engage is proselves. might answer anding orld, in a time f a few effects

er comder the ho has d fifty him in ntation, e rate of bo have to take But t. lome to d with l slaves, ayment irs and timated

e of the best

fpeedy

which

SETTLEMENTS in AMERICA. 105 best years. Such tenants, if industrious and frugal men, foon make good estates for them-

The negroes in the plantations are subsisted at a very easy rate. This is generally by alloting to each family of them a small portion of land, and allowing them two days in the week, Saturday and Sunday, to cultivate it; some are subsisted in this manner, but others find their negroes themselves with a certain portion of Guinea or Indian corn, and to some a salt herring, or a small quantity of bacon or falt pork All the rest of the charge consists in a cap, a shirt, a pair of breeches, stockings and shoes; the whole not exceding forty shillings a.year.

To particularise the commodities proper for the West-India market, would be to enumerate all the necessaries, conveniencies, and luxuries of life; for they have nothing of their own but the commodities I have already mentioned. Traders there make a very large profit upon all they fell; and all kind of handicraftsmen, especially carpenters, bricklayers and brafiers, get very great encourage-

ment.

CHAP.

CHAP. VIII.

Observations on the settlement of the West-Indies. Advantages there for tempers prejudicial at home. Bad tempers not always noxious in every sense.

THE disposition to industry has a variety of characters, and is by no means constantly of the same colour. Some acquiesce in a moderate labour through the whole of their lives, attended with no risk either to their persons or their gains; such fort of people, who form the best citizens in general, are fit to stay at home. Others full as remote from an indolent disposition, are of quite a different character. These are fiery, restless tempers, willing to undertake the severest labour, provided it promifes but a short continuance, who love risk and hazard, whose schemes are always vast, and who put no medium between being great and being undone. Characters of this fort, especially when they happen in low and middling life, are often dangerous members in a regular and fettled community. But the West-Indies opens a fair and ample field to encourage persons of fuch a disposition; and it may be reckoned one very great benefit of our possessions in that part of the world, that besides the vast quantities

fer the car pin fin ha ave or ed pullaft

ed, dit. ma wh gre wre hav

fro

the ters pass to

ind

froi

Indies. icial at ious in

variemeans acquiwhole her to of peoeneral, remote quite a restless everest contiwhose but no ng unwhen fe, are hd fetopens Cons of koned in that quantities

SETTLEMENTS in AMERICA. tities of our fabrics which they confume, our seamen that they employ, and our revenues that they support, that they are a vent to carry off such spirits, whom they keep occupied greatly to the public benefit. Our dominions are so circumstanced, and afford such a variety, that all dispositions to business, of what kind foever, may have exercise without presfing upon one another. It is besides a great happiness, that unfortunate men, whom unavoidable accidents, the frowns of the world. or the cruelty of creditors, would have rendered miserable to themselves, and useless to the public, may find a fort of afylum, where at last they often succeed so well, as to have reafon to bless those accidents, which drove them from their country poor, deserted and despised, to return them to it in opulence and cre-Of fuch a change every one can produce many instances of his own knowledge; as whoever looks about him cannot fail to fee a great number of persons, who having taken wrong steps in the beginning of their lives, have established such a character of weakness and imprudence, as prevents them ever after from being trusted or employed, wherever they are at all known, although their characters should be altogether changed and he passions quite subsided which gave occasion to their errors. Such persons become, frst, indigent, then desperate, and at last, abandon-

108 An Account of the European

ed; but when they have an opportunity of going where this prejudice does not operate against them, they set up as new men. the advantage of an experience acquired by their mistakes, they are free from the ill reputation which attended them; and they prove of vast service to their country, to which they could be of no advantage whilst they remained in it. There are persons too, far more blameable than either of the former forts, who having erred without proper caution in points of morality, are deservedly regarded with distrust and abhorrence, though they may be at bottom far from being utterly abandoned; and are still, excepting their character, the stuff proper for making very good men of the world.

These are the several sorts of people, who with very sew exceptions, have settled the West-Indies, and North America in a good measure. And thus have we drawn from the rashness of hot and visionary men; the imprudence of youth; the corruption of bad morals; and even from the wretchedness and misery of persons destitute and undone, the great source of our wealth, our strength and our power. And though this was neither the effect of our wisdom, nor the consequence of our foresight; yet having happened, it may tend to give us more wisdom and a better foresight; for it will undoubtedly be a stand-

ing

ch

an

wi

th

en

cli

to

ch

tur

рu

COL

in

the

to

the

the

the

it,

teri

der

tate

me

ear

as

cal

fro

cac

the

kn

SETTLEMENTS in AMERICA.

nity of

operate

red by

l repu-

prove

ch they

emain-

r more

ts, who

points

d with

may be

idoned;

er, the

men of

e, who

led the

a good

om the

he im-

of bad

ess and

he, the

th and

her the

nce of

t may

better

ftanding

With

ing monitor to us, how much we ought to cherish the colonies we have already established, by every encouragement in our power, and by every reasonable indulgence; and it will be an additional spur to make us active in Since experithe acquisition of new ones. ence has taught us, that as there is no foil or climate which will not shew itself grateful to culture, fo that there is no disposition, no character in mankind, which may not be turned with dextrous management to the public advantage. Those rulers, who make complaints of the temper of their people in almost any respect, ought rather to lament their own want of genius, which blinds them to the use of an instrument purposely put into their hands by Providence, for effecting perhaps the greatest things. There are humours in the body, which contained may be noxious to it, yet which fent abroad are the proper materials for generating new bodies. Providence, and a great minister who should imitate Providence, often gain their ends by means that feem most contrary to them; for earthquakes, and hurricanes, and floods, are as necessary to the well-being of things, as calm and fun-shine; life and beauty are drawn from death and corruption; and the most effi-

cacious medicines are often found united with

the most deadly poisons. This, as it is well

known, is the order of nature, and perhaps

i

109

110 An ACCOUNT of the EUROPEAN it might not unwifely be confidered, as an example for government.

CHAP. IX.

Observations on taxing the colonies. On an expensive establishment there. Objections answered.

MOUGH we have drawn fuch great advantages from our possessions in the West-Indies, and are, even in our present way of acting, likely to continue to draw Aill more; and though we have not wholly neglected the culture of that useful province; yet some will think, there are some things yet left undone, some things in which our neighbours have fet us a laudable example, and some others which the inconveniences we have felt from the want of them demonstrate to be necessary to ourselves. But it is not my purpose to handle this subject in its full extent, fince it is the wisdom and power of the legislature, and not the unauthorized speculations of a private man, which can effect any thing useful in this way. A West-Indian who is naturally warm in his temper, and not too fervilely obedient to the rules of the bienfeance, might find some faults in our proceedings here, and would perhaps reason in a manner not unlike the following.

" One

the its nu probu on tion of the in

thir whi the buil and total our purp

to

gene the you must Ever

for t

usefu adva them

you ·

an exns an-

as an

ı great in the nt way iw Aill olly neice; yet vet left ghbours d fome ave felt be ney purextent, e legisulations y thing who is too fer= feance, s here, hot un-

ki Ow

"One would think from some instances, that at the distance we are placed from the feat of authority, we were too remote to enjoy its protection, but not to feel its weight. numerable are the grievances which have oppressed us from our infancy, and which contribute to bring on us a premature old age. one of the least evils under which our plantations in the West-Indies groan, is the support of an expensive civil establishment, suited rather to an established and independent country in the plenitude of wealth and power, than to newly fettled colonies, to which nobody thinks himself to belong as to his country, and which struggle with a total want of almost all the necessaries and conveniencies of life. The building and maintaining the public works and fortifications, is a weight to which we are totally unequal, and the laying of which upon our shoulders is directly contrary to the very purpose for which you cultivate the colonies; for though the produce of these colonies is in general to be confidered as a luxury, yet is it of the greatest value to you; first, as it supplies you with things, which if not from us, you must certainly take from foreign nations. Even in this view the colonies are extremely useful. But there is another, and a much more advantageous light in which you may view them; you may consider them as they supply you with a commodity which you export to other

other countries, and which helps to bring the ballance of trade in your favour.

The whole secret of managing a foreign market, is contained in two words, to have the commodity of a good kind, and to fell it cheap; and the whole domestic policy of trade confifts in contriving to answer these two ends and principally the latter. Now, by what magic can we effect to fell as cheap as the French at any foreign market, when our planters pay four and a half per cent. duty upon all the fugars, which they ship off in America, and this after having had the same commodity in effect heavily taxed before by the poll on the negroes which work it, and by other impositions, which the planters endure according to the exigencies of the government? when the French planter pays a very infignificant poll-tax at worst, and not one per cent, duty upon all the fugars he exports; when he buys his negroes at an easier rate than we can do; when he is more favoured upon every occasion, and is besides of a temper more industrious and frugal, than is found in our people. Besides this, upon sudden emergencies we run very much in debt; the island of Barbadoes at one stroke expended thirty thousand pounds upon a fortification, to fay nothing of what this and what other islands have done in the same way and upon similar occasions? We are in reality only your factors; you in England ought to confider yourselves

as

e: e: e:

tr in

ch fo

pl fel

ple

ch

yo

rei

pri

por

fre

bea

upo

fen

fuf

nag

vol

ten

stai

the

ing the

foreign ave the cheap; de cono enda. hat ma-French ters pay l the fuand this in effect negroes s, which exigennch planat worst, he fugars bes at an is more besides of l, than is on fudin debt; xpended ation, to r islands similar factors; urselves

28

SETTLEMENTS in AMERICA. as the merchants, who should be at the whole expence, and should willingly abide by whatsoever loss accrues; fince the profits are all your own, and fince in the end by the course of trade, the loss too, let you take what shifting measures you please to avoid it, and to cheat yourselves with appearances. It is reafonable that you should lay what duty you please upon what is consumed amongst yourselves, because you govern that market as you please; but what you charge, or suffer to be charged on the islands, is only the price of your own goods enhanced fo much at the foreign market; there you have no exclusive privilege, and there you are fure to fuffer. that duty which is laid in England upon the produce of our islands, or even half of it were expended, as in reason it ought, for the support of our establishment, we might well be freed from the heavy burthens which we bear, and consequently might be somewhat upon a par with our neighbours. In our prefent condition, we not only pay very ample fularies to our governors, but they are besides suffered to make the most they can by management of our weakness, to cheat us into voluntary gratuities, which we have given often without a due consideration of our circum-This custom prompts our governors to use a thousand arts equally unbecoming their character, and prejudicial to the provin-Vol. II. Ces ces they govern. It is this which induces them to foment those divisions which tear us to pieces; and which prevent us from attending seriously and entirely to what will best advance the prosperity of our settlements.

It were a tedious and disagreeable task, to run through all the mischies of which that one error of sending a governor to make the most he can of us is the fruitful source. The governor, I allow, ought to have every where a certain, reasonable, and even a genteel salary; but then, when he has this, he ought not to be in a condition to hope for any thing further, and ought to consider nothing but how he may best perform the duty of his office.

But I hear it objected, that we are already extremely chargeable to England, who fends her troops to protect us, and her fleets to cover our trade, at a very great expence, for which we ought to be contented, and even thankful; and that it is unreasonable to expect she should bear every part of our burthen, loaded as she is with the weight of a vast national debt, and a most expensive establish-But to this my answer is ment of her own. short, plain, and practical. The French do all this. They fend armies and fleets to protect their colonies as well as you; but they fupport the establishment in their own plantations notwithstanding; and they are far from suppoling

pol kn the thi in t laid me our ims whi lear deed mitt prod Aill the

you fugaenter confithis ward fugamuch fance you confit the H

induces
tear us
attendbest adis.
task, to
ich that
hake the
The
y where
eel salae ought
ny thing
hing but

of his

already ho sends ts to conce, for nd even e to exburthen, of a vast lstablishnswer is ench do p protect hey supantations om suppoling

SETTLEMENTS in AMERICA. 115 poling this an insupportable burthen. know that a little judicious expence is often the best economy in the world, and that in this case, it is only sparing their own subjects in the West-Indies, and levying the money laid out for their use upon the foreign consumer. What they do, I see no impossibility of They learned many of their maxour doing. ims of trade, as well as many of the fabrics which supply it, from us; I wish we would learn from them in our turn. We have, indeed, some years ago eased the trade, by permitting ships from the islands to carry our produce out directly to foreign markets; but still it is so clogged, that we do not feel all the benefit which we might expect from a more general and better regulated liberty.

Not to carry our enquiries further, see what you stave gained by prohibiting us to land our sugars directly in Ireland, before they are first entered in an English port. What was the consequence? why your sugars grew dear by this loading and unloading, and passing backward and forward. The Portuguese offered sugars of at least equal goodness, and at a much more moderate price. The merchants in Ireland would not refuse so good an offer out of a compliment to you, who in this instance paid them no compliment at all; and you cannot, for very good reasons, dispute with the Portuguese about it. If this has happen-

2

ed

الخب

An ACCOUNT of the EUROPEAN ed at home, the consequence must be infinitely worse abroad. But it is said that our failures abroad are only owing to this; that we have not ground enough conveniently situated to produce more sugars than satisfies the home demand. But this is far enough from the case. There is in several of the islands, but there is in Jamaica in particular, a great quantity of good land, and well enough situated too, if means were taken to bring it into culture, and a choice of markets to animate the planter in the cultivation; who certainly deserves every fort of encouragement, as he asks for nothing but to be put into such a condition, as may enable him to be of more fervice to his mother country."

CHAP. X.

State of the negroes in the West-Indies. Danger from them. Methods proposed for remedying these abuses. The necessity of increasing the whites. Use of this regulation in trade.

N the foregoing manner the West-Indian would state some part of what he conceives to be his grievances, and those I believe he would be earnest enough to have remedied. But there are other regulations, which a person not concerned in their affairs might think very proper too, but which the West-Indian

V gr In

fa

up in The fir ge

my flav ifla her

pri to

and Th the pro mu

hav at t in t peop

the to d bly West-Indian would enter into with a much

greater degree of phlegm.

There are now allowed to be in our West-Indies at least two hundred and thirty thou-sand negroe slaves; and it is allowed too that upon the highest calculation the whites there, in all, do not amount to ninety thousand souls. This disproportion shews so clearly at the first glance how much the colonies are endangered, both from within and without; how much exposed to the assaults of a foreign enemy, and to the insurrection of their own slaves, (which latter circumstance in all our islands keeps the people in perpetual apprehensions) that it may be a just cause of surprize, that no measures what soever are taken to correct this dangerous irregularity.

This disproportion between the freemen and negroes grows more visible every day. That enterprifing spirit which the novelty of the object and various concurrent causes had produced in the last century, has decayed very We have as many men indigent and much. unemployed at home as we had then; but they have not the same spirit and activity they had The disposition of the people at that time. in the West-Indies concurs with that of our people at home, to increase and to perpetuate the evil of which I complain; for they chuse to do every thing by negroes, which can possibly be done by them; and though they have

I 3

Danger remedyincreasing trade.

be infi-

hat our

s; that

eniently

fatisfies

enough

l of the

rticular,

enough

bring it

s to ani-

who cer-

ement, as

to fuch a

of more

ft-Indian he confe I beto have gulations, ir affairs hich the ft-Indian

An ACCOUNT of the European 118

laws and ordinances to oblige them to keep a certain number of white fervants in some proportion to their blacks, in most places these laws are but a dead letter. They find it more easy to pay the penalty when seldom it is exacted, than to comply with the law. avarice in the particulars makes them blind to the hazards to which they expose the sum to-This disposition in the tal of their affairs. planters is now almost grown inveterate, and to fuch a degree, that the remedy will probably never be administered by themselves; and if this disposition continues, in a little time. (which is indeed nearly the case already,) all the English in our colonies there will consist of little more than a few planters and merchants; and the rest will be a despicable, though a dangerous, because a numerous and disaffected herd of African slaves.

Indubitably the fecurity, as well as the folid wealth of every nation, confifts principally in the number of low and middling men of a free condition, and that beautiful gradation from the highest to the lowest, where the transitions all the way are almost impercepti-To produce this ought to be the aim and mark of every well regulated commonwealth, and none has ever flourished upon other But when we consider the colo**principles.** ny out of that independent light, and as it is related to Great Britain, it is clear that this

neglect

ſu in of qu rea tal ne ver

nu for wh fro me We as 1 but lar

fuff thei ene infi clin of t the

com do ftud

tran brot ne proes these it more it is ex-

Ņ

Their blind to fum toin the ate, and l probaes; and le time ady,) all confift of rchants;

ough a

saffected

s the foincipally men of a gradation here the perceptiaim and nwealth, in other he colol as it is that this neglect neglect is of great detriment to the mother country; because it is certain, that the consumption of our commodities there would be in a great measure in proportion to the number of white men; and there is nobody at all acquainted with the plantations, who will not readily allow, that when I say one white man takes off as much of our manufactures as three negroes, that I estimate his value to us at a very low rate.

But the necessity of having there a proper number of whites is not only strongly enforced by the confideration of the great gain which would from thence accrue to us, but from the vast savings which such an arrangement would produce. The militia of the West-Indies is exceedingly well trained, so as to be in discipline not very much inferior, but in courage and spirit beyond most regular troops; and they really want nothing but fufficient numbers to be able fully to defend themselves, and occasionally to annoy the enemy; for both which purposes they are infinitely more fit by being habituated to the climate, than raw troops, which in this part of the world can never meet the enemy in the field with much more than half their complement. A less number of troops would do there in all times, if this point was well studied; and I may venture to say, that the transporting and comfortably providing for a proper number of men effectually to secure

I 4

120 An ACCOUNT of the EUROPEAN

our colonies, and even to make any attempt upon them desperate, would not have cost the government one third part of the money, which for these twenty years past has been expended in the transporting and maintaining of troops there, who die and waste away without any benefit to themselves or their country; whereas these settlers, who would so effectually intimidate a foreign enemy, and take away all hope of liberty from the negroes, would all the while be enriching their mother country, and paying a large interest for the sums she expended in their establishment.

I am conscious that many objections will be made against the very proposal, and that many more would be started against any effectual scheme for increasing the number of white servants in the West-Indies. represented, as of very little use, disorderly, idle, drunken, and fitter to pervert the negroes, than to be any affishance to them in their busi-This I believe to be in general true; but this is no fort of objection to having them; though it is an excellent argument for putting them, their masters, and the whole colony under a better regulation. If we labour under great inconveniencies from the want of a police at home, this want is infinitely more visible in the West-Indies, where for the most part they all live without the least fense of religion, in a state of vice and debauchery, which is really

rea ch lig ver any the equ *s*tri and tica plac anot and plac muc fary estin

maic when vated gable which land near dity. encoreffit cacao

wood

ttempt e cost noney, s been taining away r their would ny, and he ne-

g their

interest ablish-

ns will nd that any efnber of hey are orderly, egroes, ir busil true; them; putting colony under police vifible st part ligion, ich is really

SETTLEMENTS in AMERICA. really deplorable to confider them as men and christians, and of a very bad aspect in a political light. If therefore it should be thought convenient by the wisdom of our government, at any time to enter into a scheme for peopling these countries fully and properly, it will be equally convenient at the fame time to take fuch strict measures as may preserve them from vice and idleness; a thing far enough from impracticable. Whenever such regulations shall take place, they will in a good measure answer another end too, the preserving the health and lives of the people; a point which in all places every wife government will have very much at heart; but which is above all necesfary in a colony, where the people are an inestimable treasure, and where the climate itself is sufficiently fatal.

These observations principally regard Jamaica, the largest and best of our islands, where there are prodigious tracts of uncultivated land. As the rivers there are not navigable, and as sugar is a bulky commodity which cannot afford to pay for a very long land carriage, the coasts, or only the land very near the coasts, can be turned to that commodity. But if poor people were sufficiently encouraged to settle in the inland parts, necessity would oblige them to raise cotton, cacao, cossee, ginger, aloes, allspice, the dying woods, and other things which require no

vast

vast labour, are not so burthensome in carriage, and which have all a sufficient demand at home to encourage people who do not look to great and sudden fortunes. we bring all these, especially the cotton, which is of great use in our manufactures, from abroad, we might encourage the raising more of it by some moderate premium. fame necessity too, would oblige them to try experiments on cochineal, and various other things which we don't now think of, and which the climate would not refuse. degrees, and with good management, they would improve in the culture of many of these articles in which they are now defective; the careful would grow tolerably rich; and confiderable works of many valuable commodities, as cacao, cochineal, and even indigo, may be attempted with small capitals. Excepting the labour, I don't know that any of these require above two or three hundred pounds to begin with. So that whilst the great stocks, and the lands convenient to navigation are employed in fugars, the finall capitals and the inland might be employed in the less expensive, though not less useful articles I have mentioned; every part would flourish, and agriculture would have its share with the other improvements; so that the great number might be subsisted at less expence than the tew are now maintained. this,

fo ftc me par anc ver wit for ver gre the pari they hun do 1 at t lieve prop now

forti

at pr

123

in cardemand do not And as cotton, actures, e raising The nem to various hink of, ise. By nt, they many of w defecbly rich; valuable and even capitals. that any hundred hilst the nt to nafmall cabloyed in eful artit would its share that the less ex-All ed. this,

this, I am confident, could be effected for twenty thousand pounds, or less, properly laid out; and the island by this means be rendered in a few years three times more beneficial to us than it is at present. By the neglect of fome encouragement of this kind, the great stocks, and the running into a staple which required them, have by degrees devoured the island. It is the nature of vast stocks to create a fort of monopoly; and it is the nature of monopoly to aim at great profits from a comparatively little produce; but diffuse business, and by bringing it within the compass of several, you will make them fit down each with a small profit, for all cannot hope a fortune, but the joint produce of all will be very confiderable. Indigo was once very greatly produced in Jamaica, and it enriched the island to so great a degree, that in the parish of Vere, where this drug was cultivated, they are faid to have had no less than three hundred gentlemen's coaches; a number I do not imagine even the whole island exceeds at this day; and there is great reason to believe, that there were many more persons of property in Jamaica formerly than are there now, though perhaps they had not those vast fortunes, which dazzle us in such a manner at present.

CHAP.

124 An ACCOUNT of the EUROPEAN

CHAP. XI.

Misery of the negroes. Great waste of them.

Methods of preventing it. Instruction of negroes in religion.

SINCE I have indulged myself so long in a speculation, which appears to me very material to the welfare of these colonies, I shall venture to say something farther concerning another part of the inhabitants, tho it may perhaps meet no warm reception from those who are the most nearly concerned.

The negroes in our colonies endure a flavery more compleat, and attended with far worse circumstances, than what any people in their condition suffer in any other part of the world, or have suffered in any other period of Proofs of this are not wanting. prodigious waste which we experience in this unhappy part of our species, is a full and melancholy evidence of this truth. The island of Barbadoes, (the negroes upon which do not amount to eighty thousand) notwithstanding all the means which they use to increase them by propagation, notwithstanding that the climate is in every respect, except that of being more wholfome, exactly refembling the climate from whence they come; notwithstanding all this, Barbadoes lies under

a ne-

in Io

lie in

gi th

th

be

OW

gre

ou! ſev

or

and

lab ref

the wh

gre wh

ral

his

the

wo the

the

of them. on of ne-

long in me very onies, I er connts, tho' on from

ned. e a flavewith far people in rt of the period of The e in this and mehe island hich do hotwithuse to thstand-, except resemcome; s under

a ne-

SETTLEMENTS in AMERICA.

a necessity of an annual recruit of five thoufand flaves to keep up the stock at the number I have mentioned. This prodigious faillure, which is at least in the same proportion in all our islands, shews demonstratively that fome uncommon and insupportable hardship lies upon the negroes which wears them down in such a surprising manner; and this, I imagine, is principally the excessive labour which they undergo. For previously, I suppose, that none of the inhabitants of the countries between the tropics are capable, even in their own climates, of near fo much labour without great prejudice to them, as our people are in ours. But in our plantations the blacks work feverely for five days, without any relaxation or intermission, for the benefit of the master, and the other two days they are obliged to labour for their own subsistence during the rest of the week; and this, I imagine, with the other circumstances of great severity which depress their spirits, naturally cuts off great numbers, as well as disqualifies those who remain from supplying this waste by natural propagation.

The planter will say, that if he is to allow his negroes more recreation, and to indulge them in more hours of absence from their work, he can never reimburse himself for the charge he has been at in the purchase of the flave, nor make the profits which induced

him

126 An Account of the European

him to go to that expence. But this, though it appears plausible enough at first, because the flaves are very dear, and because they do not yield above ten or twelve pounds a head annually clear profit by their labour, is notwithstanding very fallacious. For let it be considered, that out of their stock of eighty thousand in Barbadoes, there die every year five thousand negroes more than are born in that island: in effect this people is under a necessity of being entirely renewed every fixteen years; and what must we think of the management of a people, who far from increasing greatly, as those who have no loss by wars ought to do, must in so short a space of time as sixteen years, without foreign recruits, be entirely confumed to a man? Let us suppose that these saves stand the Barbadians in no more than twenty pounds a head out of the ship; whereas, in reality, they cost a great deal more; this makes one hundred thousand pounds every year, and in fixteen years one million fix hundred thousand pounds. A sum really aftonishing, and amounting to a fourth of the value of every thing they export.

Now suppose, that by allowing a more moderate labour, and some other indulgences, a great number of these deaths might be prevented, (and many I think it is probable would so be prevented,) and that they could keep up within a thousand of their stock, (and why

they

th
I d
wa
fro
wh
I fi
be
for
fou
fimation
wil

mai of i pou fave oug

poll

ded

fhev trem are a coul

that feeds from him

work mon though because ise they s a head , is notet it be f eighty ery year rninthat necessity en years; agement greatly, ought to as fixteen entirely hat thefe ore than he ship; reat deal thousand

a fourth ort. hore moences, a be prele would keep up nd why they

rears one

A fum

they could entirely keep it up by fuch means, I cannot possibly guess) they would save in this way eighty thousand pounds every year. from thence we must deduct the time in which these slaves have been unemployed. I suppose that all reasonable indulgences might be given of every fort for the difference of forty thousand pounds, which is the labour of four thousand flaves. This will be far from a small allowance, especially as in this way less time will be lost by fickness, and the surgeon will have less employment. Then, after all deductions, by behaving like good men, good masters, and good christians, the inhabitants of this one island would fave forty thousand pounds a year; which if instead of being faved, it were lost by fuch a proceeding, it ought to be confidered as a necessary loss, and borne accordingly.

This matter, though not I think before shewn in this same light, seems in itself extremely clear; but if it were yet clearer, there are several gentlemen of the West-Indies who could not comprehend it; though a waggoner in England will comprehend very clearly, that if he works his horse but moderately, and feeds him well, he will draw more profit from him in the end, than if he never gave him an hour's respite in the day from his work, and at night turned him upon the common for his subsistence. I am far from con-

tending

128 An Account of the European

tending in favour of an effeminate indulgence to these people. I know that they are stubborn and intractable for the most part, and that they must be ruled with a rod of iron. I would have them ruled, but not crushed with it. I would have a humanity exercised which is confistent with steadiness. And I think it clear from the whole course of history, that those nations which have behaved with the greatest humanity to their slaves, were always best served, and ran the least hazard from their rebellions. And I am the more convinced of the necessity of these indulgences, as flaves certainly cannot go through so much work as freemen. The mind goes a great way in every thing; and when a man knows that his labour is for himself; and that the more he labours, the more he is to acquire, this consciousness carries him through, and fupports him beneath fatigues, under which he otherwise would have sunk.

The prejudice this faving would be to the African trade, is I know an objection which to fome would appear very plaufible. But furely, one cannot hear without horror of a trade which must depend for its support upon the annual murder of several thousands of innocent men; and indeed nothing could excuse the slave trade at all, but the necessity we are under of peopling our colonies, and the consideration that the slaves we buy were in the

fame

fo

th

ſc

ca

an

ho

ref

rec

wi

da

er

by

th

2C

lulgence are stubart, and of iron. crushed exercised And I of histobehaved

AN

least haam the ese indulthrough

ir slaves,

nind goes en a man and that

acquire, ugh, and er which

be to the on which ble. But cror of a cort upon ds of in-ld excuse y we are he consider in the same

fame condition in Africa, either hereditary, or taken in war. But in fact, if the waste of these men should become less, the price would fall; then if a due order were taken the same demand might be kept, by the extending our colonies, which is now produced by the havock made of the people. This is the case on the continent, where though the slaves increase, there is an annual call for seven thousand at least.

The principal time I would have referved for the indulgence I propose to be granted to the slaves, is Sunday, or the Lord's day; a day which is profaned in a manner altogether fcandalous in our colonies. On this day, I would have them' regularly attend at church; I would have them, particularly the children, carefully (full as carefully as any others) instructed in the principles of religion and virtue, and especially in the humility, submission and honesty which become their condition. rest of the day might be devoted to innocent recreation; to these days of relaxation, and with the same exercises, should be added some days in the grand festival of Christmass, Easter and Whitsuntide, and perhaps, four or five days in the year besides. Such methods would by degrees habituate their masters, not to think them a fort of beafts, and without fouls, as some of them do at present, who treat them accordingly; and the flaves would of course Vol. II.

grow more honest, tractable, and less of eyeservants; unless the fanctions of religion, the
precepts of morality, and all the habits of an
early institution, be of no advantage to mankind.
Indeed I have before me an * author, if he
may be so called, who treats the notion of
bringing the negroes to christianity with
contempt, and talks of it at the best, as a
thing of indifference. But besides that he
appears to me a writer of every little judgment, I cannot conceive with what face
any body, who pretends to inform the public, can set up as an advocate for irreligion,
barbarism, and gross ignorance.

be

lin

an

ifla

fhd

chi

or

of

the

rate

shol

thei rent

whe

will

fom

to th will

man

own

in ou

flaves

not i

fortu

cabac

io ma

no m

T

CHAP. XII.

Proposal for a sort of enfranchisement of mulattoes and negroes. Danger from the multitude of house negroes.

T is said, that the law of England is savourable to liberty; and so far this observation is just, that when we had men in a servile condition amongst us, the law took advantage even of neglects of the masters to enfranchise the villain; and seemed for that purpose even to subtilize a little; because our ancestors judged, that freemen were the real support of the kingdom. What if in our colonies we should

* Oldmixon.

of eyen, the
of an
nkind.
if he
tion of
with
t, as a
hat he
judgat face
ne pubeligion,

f mulatsultitude

favourervation fervile vantage ranchife ofe even nceftors oport of nies we should

should go so far, as to find out some medium between libetty and absolute slavery, in which we might place all mulattoes after a certain limited fervitude to the owner of the mother; and fuch blacks, who being born in the islands, their masters for their good services should think proper in some degree to enfranchife? These might have land allotted them, or where that could not be spared, some fort of fixed employment, from either of which they should be obliged to pay a certain moderate rent to the public. Whatever they should acquire above this, to be the reward of their industry. The necessity of paying the rent would keep them from idleness; and when men are once fet to work through necessity, they will not stop there; but they will gradually strive for conveniencies, and fome even for superfluities. All this will add to the demand for our goods, and the colony will be strengthened by the addition of fo many men, who will have an interest of their own to fight for.

There is, amongst others, a very bad custom in our colonies of multiplying their houshold slaves far beyond reason and necessity. It is not uncommon for families of no very great fortunes, to have twenty-five or thirty in the capacity of menial servants only. These are so many hands taken from planting, to be of no manner of use to the public; but they are

K 2

infinitely

An ACCOUNT of the EUROPEAN infinitely the most dangerous of the slaves; for being at all times about our people, they come to abate of that great reverence, which the field negroes have for the whites, without losing any thing of the resentment of their condition, which is common to both. besides, in any insurrection they have it more in their power to strike a sudden and fatal Surely a fumptuary law might be contrived to restrain the number of the menial flaves, as there might and ought to be one strictly enjoining all who keep five fervants, to have one white man and one white woman amongst them, without any power of being indulged in a contrary practice; as it ought to be a rule never to be broken through, to have not only the overfeers, but even all the drivers, white men.

The alarms we are under at the news of any petty armament in the West-Indies, is a demonstrative proof of the weakness of our condition there; which is, however, so far from roufing us to feek any proper remedy, that there are not wanting of the people of that country, many who would use a thousand pretences to prevent our taking the only possible means of securing their own possessions from danger; as the majority of men will always be found ready to prefer fome present gain to their future and more permanent interests. But the apparent and

dangerous

ďa

tic

rio

for

dangerous progress of the French ought, methinks, to rouse us from our long inaction, and to animate us to enterprise some regulations, in a strain of policy far superior to any thing I have ventured to hint, for the interest of the commerce, and the honour of the councils of the British nation.



K 3

PART

flaves; e, they which without of their. And it more and fatal ight be the mett to be five fer-

ne white nower of he; as it hrough, even all

news of lies, is a s of our remedy, beople of thousand the only own posty of men

fer fome ore perrent and

angerous



PART VII.

British North America.

CHAP. I.

A general view of the English dominions in North America.

T is somewhat difficult to ascertain the bounds of the English property in North America, to the Northern and Western sides; for to the Northward, it should seem, that we might extend our claims quite to the pole itself, nor does any nation seem inclined to dispute the property of this Northernmost country with us. France has by the treaty of Utrecht, ceded to us Hudson's bay, the streights of Hudson, and all the country bordering upon that bay and those streights. If we should chuse to take our stand upon the Northern extremity of New Britain, or Terra de La-

de ha th an dr is, on rer W ene am felv the the the fou Bu tha or bou (up con the On

We

Th

the

the

tim

mag

Sou

de Labrador, and look towards the South, we have a territory extending in that aspect from the 60th to the 31st degree of North latitude, and consequently more than seventeen hundred miles long in a direct line. This country is, all the way, washed by the Atlantic ocean on the East; to the South it has the small remains of the Spanish Florida; but to the Westward, our bounds are disputed by our enemies, and do not feem well agreed upon amongst ourselves. They who govern themfelves by the charters to our colonies, run their jurisdiction quite across the continent to the South-Sea; others contract our rights to the hither banks of the Missisppi, and take four of the great lakes into our dominions. But upon what grounds they have fixed upon that river as a barrier, other than that rivers or mountains feem to be a species of natural boundaries, I cannot determine. (upon the fame grounds, I suppose,) have contracted us within limits yet narrower; they make the Apalachian mountains, the lake Ontario, and the river St. Laurence, the most Westerly frontier of our rights in America. The French agreeing, in some respects, with these latter, (or the latter rather agreeing with the French, whose maps they have for a long time fervilely and shamefully copied,) have made the mountains hem us in from their Southern commencement, to about the 44th K 4 degree.

. 1

ions in

in the North of fides; hat we be pole ined to rnmost treaty by, the ry borits. If pon the Terra

de La-

degree of North latitude, or thereabouts, where this long chain terminates; then they draw a line flanting to the North-East, by which they cut off a great part of the provinces of New York, New England, and Nova Scotia,

and leave our bounds at such a distance from the river St. Laurence, as they judge convenient.

This distribution, and the military dispofitions which the French have made to fupport it, form the principal cause of the quarrel which now subsists between the two kingdoms; and it is the issue of this quarrel, which must instruct future geographers in adjusting the boundaries of the two nations. present, I shall only mention what we have fettled, without offering any opinion of my own concerning our bounds. Our rights in Nova Scotia have been already ascertained and established in a clear and cogent manner; but with regard to our claims in the Ohio and Missisppi, the rashness of some writers in a matter which is a public concern, feems to mé very blameable. Some of them timidly or ignorantly drawing our territories into a very inconvenient narrowness; whilst others have madly claimed all North America from fea to fea; fome would give us very narrow bounds, whilst others will hear of no bounds at all.

Posterity

P able could our deter clear the deter neigh tling into maki force been at ar timel

In neither the or nor or or but a South ving North Nova

tled c

of liv

Posterity will perhaps think it unaccountable, that in a matter of fuch importance we could have been fo thoughtless as to leave on our back fuch a nation as France, without determining, in any manner, even fufficiently clear to settle our own demands, what part of the country was our own right, or what we determined to leave to the discretion of our neighbours; or that wholly intent upon fettling the sea coast, we have never cast an eye into the country, to discover the necessity of making a barrier against them, with a proper force; which formerly did not need to have been a very great one, nor to be maintained at any great expence. That cheap and timely caution would have faved us thousands of lives and millions of money; but the hour

In the ensuing discourse, I think it better neither to confider our fettlements directly in the order of the time of their establishment, nor of their advantage to the mother country, but as they lie near one another, North and South from New England to Carolina; referving for the end the new fettlements on the Northern and Southern extremities, those of Nova Scotia and Georgia, and the unfettled countries about Hudson's bay.

is now passed.

CHAP.

vhere draw vhich ces of cotia, from con-

-oqlib) lup+ quarkingwhich usting or the have of my hts in tained anner; Ohio

vriters feems midly into a others from arrow ounds

serity

CHAP. II.

First attempts to settle North America. rise and progress of the puritans. They are persecuted by Laud. Several fly into New England.

TE derive our rights in America from the discovery of Sebastian Cabot, who first made the Northern continent in 1497. The fact is fufficiently certain to establish a right to our settlements in North America: but the particulars are not known distinctly enough to encourage me to enter into a detail of his voyage. The country was in general called Newfoundland, a name which is now appropriated folely to an island upon its coast. It was a long time before we made any attempt to fettle this country; though in this point we were no more backward than our neighbours, who probably did not abstain so long out of respect to our prior discovery. Sir Walter Raleigh shewed the way, by planting a colony in the Southern part, which he called Virginia. However, the spirit of colonization was not yet fully raised. lived at case in their own country, and the new settlement of Virginia, though dressed up in all the showy colours which eloquence could bestow upon it, gave adventurers but little

little Am com

the Fro in E ed a and chui than little And alter they relig temp Seve cutio turne mind their tions they averi cerer nated **stron** gove of the

impa

ca. The They are into New

ica from bot, who in 1497. stablish a America: distinctly o a detail n general h is now its coast. e any ath in this than our abstain so liscovery. by plantt, which spirit of d. Men and the ressed up loquence urers but

little

little encouragement. The affairs of North America were in the hands of an exclusive company, and they prospered accordingly.

Things remained in this condition until the latter end of the reign of James the first. From the commencement of the reformation in England, two parties of protestants subsisted amongst us; the first had chosen gradually and almost imperceptibly to recede from the church of Rome; softening the lines, rather than erasing the figure, they made but very little alteration in the appearances of things. And the people seeing the exterior so little altered, hardly perceived the great changes they had made in the doctrines of their religion. The other party of a warmer temper, had more zeal and less policy. Several of them had fled from the perfecution in queen Mary's days; and they returned in those of queen Elizabeth with minds fufficiently heated by refentment of their fufferings, and by the perpetual disputations which had exercised them all the while they were abroad. Abroad they learned an aversion to the episcopal order, and to religious ceremonies of every fort; they were impregnated with an high spirit of liberty, and had a strong tendency to the republican form of government. Queen Elizabeth had enough of the blood of Harry the eighth, to make her impatient of an opposition to her will, especially

An Account of the European

ally in matters of religion, in which she had an high opinion of her own knowledge. advised with the party but very little in the alterations which she thought proper to make; and disliking the notions, which they seemed to entertain in politics, she kept them down during the whole course of her reign with an

uniform and inflexible feverity.

However, the party was far enough from being destroyed. The merit of their sufferings, the affected plainness of their dress, the gravity of their deportment, the use of scripture phrases upon the most ordinary occafions, and even their names, which had fomething striking and venerable, as being borrowed from the old testament, or having a fort of affected relation to religious matters, gained them a general efteem amongst sober people of ordinary understandings. This party was very numerous; and their zeal made them yet more confiderable than their numbers. They were commonly called puritans.

When king James came to the throne, he had a very fair opportunity of pacifying matters; or at worst he might have left them in the condition he found them; but it happened quite otherwise. The unkingly disputation at Hampton-court did more to encourage the puritans to persevere in their opinions, by the notice which was taken of them, than all king James's logic, as a scholar, backed with

his

tha

def

left

tow

we

me

ceff

me

gre

As

nev

in

aga

odi

to t

ed 1

the

and

doć

he

wa

tioi

ma

tho

fcr

the

reg

ed

fati

he had an ge. She e in the to make; y feemed em down with an

gh from heir fufeir dress, e use of ary occaad someporrowed ort of afc, gained er people party was de them numbers. s.

rone, he ing matthem in happensputation trage the s, by the than all ked with all

SETTLEMENTS in AMERICA. 141 his power as a king, could do to suppress that party. They were persecuted, but not destroyed; they were exasperated, and yet left powerful; and a severity was exercised towards them, which at once exposed the weakness and the ill intentions of the government.

In this state things continued until the accession of Charles, when they were far from mending. This prince, endowed with many great virtues, had very few amiable qualities. As grave as the puritans themselves, he could never engage the licentious part of the world in his favour; and that gravity being turned against the puritans, made him but the more odious to them. He gave himself up entirely to the church and churchmen; and he finished his ill conduct in this respect, by conferring the first ecclesiastical dignity of the kingdom, and a great fway in temporal affairs, upon doctor Laud. Hardly fit to direct a college, he was called to govern a kingdom. was one of those indiscreet men of good intentions, who are the people in the world that make the worst figure in politics. This man thought he did good service to religion by a scrupulous enquiry into the manner in which the ministers every where conformed to the regulations of the former reigns. He deprived great numbers for nonconformity. Not fatisfied with this, in which perhaps he was justifiable

justifiable enough, if he had managed prudently, he made new regulations, and introduced on a people already abhorrent of the most necessary ceremonies, ceremonies of a new kind, of a most useless nature, and such as were even ridiculous, if the serious consequences which attended them may not intitle them to be considered as matters of importance.

Several great men, disgusted at the proceedings of the court, and entertaining very reasonable apprehensions for the public liberty, to make themselves popular, attached themfelves to the popular notions of religion, and affected to maintain them with great zeal. Others became puritans through principle. And now their affairs put on a respectable appearance; in proportion as they became of consequence, their sufferings seemed to be more and more grievous; the severities of Laud raised, not terror as formerly, but a fort of indignant hatred; and they became every day further and further from listening to the least terms of agreement with surplices, organs, common-prayer, or table at the Westend of the church. As they who are ferious about trifles, are ferious indeed, their lives began to grow miserable to several on account of these ceremonies; and rather than be obliged to submit to them, there was no part of the world to which they would not have fled with chearfulness.

Early

of p fuge try q worl tisfie they their for v powe indol to ren **fuper** Engla Plym in th had c fo. T who coast the S count

The which were bad feed but was pro

names

scene the en SETTLEMENTS in AMERICA.

Early in the reign of king James a number of persons of this persuasion had sought refuge in Holland; in which, though a country of the greatest religious freedom in the world, they did not find themselves better satisfied than they had been in England. There they were tolerated indeed, but watched; their zeal began to have dangerous languors for want of opposition; and being without power or consequence, they grew tired of the indolent fecurity of their fanctuary; they chose to remove to a place where they should see no superior; and therefore they sent an agent to England, who agreed with the council of Plymouth for a tract of land in America, within their jurisdiction, to settle in, after they had obtained from the king a privilege to do fo. The Plymouth council was a company, who by their charter had not only all the coast of North America from Nova Scotia to the Southern parts of Carolina, (the whole country being then distinguished by the names of South and North Virginia) as a scene for their exclusive trade; but they had the entire property of the soil besides.

This colony established itself at a place which they called New Plymouch. They were but few in number; they landed in a bad season; and they were not at all supported but from their private funds. The winter was premature, and terribly cold. The coun-

Early

N

d pru-

l intro-

of the

es of a

fuch as

lequen-

e them

roceed-

reason-

erty, to

them-

on, and

at zeal.

rinciple.

able ap-

ame of

d to be

rities of

ut a fort

e every

g to the

ces, or-

West-

ferious

ives be-

count of

obliged

t of the

ve fled

ance.

try was all covered with wood, and afforded very little for the refreshment of persons sickly with such a voyage, or for sustenance of an infant people. Near half of them perished by the scurvy, by want, and the severity of the climate; but they who survived, not dispirited with their losses, nor with the hardships they were still to endure, supported by the vigour which was then the character of Englishmen, and by the satisfaction of finding themselves out of the reach of the spiritual arm, they reduced this savage country to yield them a tolerable livelihood, and by degrees a com-

fortable subsistence.

This little establishment was made in the Several of their brethren in England labouring under the same difficulties, took the fame methods of escaping from them. The colony of puritans infenfibly increased; but as yet they had not extended themselves much beyond New Plymouth. It was in the year 1629, that the colony began to flourish in fuch a manner, that they foon became a confiderable people. By the close of the enfuing year they had built four towns, Salem, Dorchester, Charles-town, and Boston, which has fince become the capital of New Eng-That enthusiasm which was reversing every thing at home, and which is fo dangerous in every fettled community, proved of admirable service here. It became a principle

of quarting for time a

fely but trace fish land affir men tect tling shoot for religion

grea pate Seal Pyn with

was liam Cro

emb V SETTLEMENTS in AMERICA.

145 of life and vigour, that enabled them to conquer all the difficulties of a favage country. Their exact and fober manners proved a fubflitute for a proper subordination, and regular form of government, which they had for some time wanted, and the want of which in such a country had otherwise been felt very se-

verely.

And now, not only they who found themfelves uneafy at home upon a religious account, but feveral on account of the then profitable trade of furs and skins, and for the sake of the fishery, were invited to settle in New Eng-But this colony received its principal affiftance from the discontent of several great men of the puritan party, who were its protectors, and who entertained a defign of fettling amongst them in New England, if they should fail in the measures they were pursuing for establishing the liberty, and reforming the religion of their mother country. They follicited grants in New England, and were at a great expence in fettling them. Amongst these patentees, we see the lords Brooke, Say and Seale, the Pelhams, the Hampdens, and the Pyms; the names which afterwards appeared with fo much eclat upon a greater stage. It was faid that fir Matthew Boynton, fir William Constable, fir Arthur Haslerig, and Oliver Cromwell were actually upon the point of embarking for New England; when arch-Vol. II. bishop

became a of the ens, Salem, n, which ew Engreverling danger-

ΑN

afforded

ons fick-

ce of an

ished by

ty of the

dispirit-

ardships

y the vi-

English-

ig them-

ual arm,

eld them

s a com-

de in the

thren in

fficulties,

om them.

ncreased;

nemselves

vas in the

flourish

roved of principle ot

146 An Account of the European bishop Laud, unwilling that so many objects of his hatred should be removed out of the reach of his power, applied for, and obtained an order from the court to put a stop to these transportations; and thus he kept forcibly from venting itself that virulent humour which he lived to fee the destruction of himfelf, his order, his religion, his matter, and the constitution of his country. However, he was not able to prevail so far as to hinder New England from receiving vast reinforcements, as well of the clergy who were deprived of their livings, or not admitted to them for nonconformity, as of such of the laity who adhered to their opinions.

CHAP. III.

Difference in religion, divides the colony. Maffachuset. Connecticut. Providence. Spirit of persecution. Persecution of the quakers. Disputes about grace.

THE part of New England called Massachuset's Bay, had now settlements very thick all along the sea shore. Some slips from these were planted in the province of Main and New Hampshire, being torn from the original stock by the religious violence, which was the chief characteristic of the first settlers in New England. The patentees we last mentioned, con inde havi bord arifii were

Plyn $\mathbf{F}_{\mathbf{c}}$ Engl name court chart an or ed, p laws neith fettlin. colon ed wa asts, t all rei as the they . were genius of the fince i

As puritar confid objects
of the
otained
o these
orcibly
numour
of himer, and
ever, he
er New
ements,
rived of

for non-

o adhe-

. Maf-. Spirit quakers.

Massants very ips from of Main rom the e, which t settlers we last ntioned, mentioned, principally settled upon the river Connecticut, and established a separate and independent government there: some persons having before that fixed themselves upon the borders of this river, who sled som the tyranny arising from the religious differences which were moulded into the first principles of the

Plymouth and Massachuset's colonies.

For a confiderable time the people of New England had hardly any that deserved the name of a regular form of government. The court took very little care of them. By their charter they were empowerd to establish such an order, and to make fuch laws as they pleafed, provided they were not contrary to the laws of England. A point not easily settled, neither was there any means appointed for As they who composed the new colonies were generally persons of a contracted way of thinking, and most violent enthusiasts, they imitated the Jewish polity in almost all respects; and adopted the books of Moses as the law of the land. The first laws which they made were grounded upon them, and were therefore very ill suited to the customs, genius, or circumstances of that country, and of those times; for which reason they have fince fallen into disuse.

As to religion, it was, as I have faid, the puritan. In England this could hardly be confidered as a formed fect at the time of L 2 their

148 An Account of the European their emigration, fince several who had received episcopal ordination were reckoned to belong to it. But as foon as they found themfelves at liberty in America, they fell into a way very little different from the independent Every parish was sovereign with-Synods indeed were occasionally called, but they served only to prepare and digest matters, which were to receive their fanction from the approbation of the several The fynods could exercise no churches. branch of ecclesiastical jurisdiction, either as to doctrine or to discipline. They had no power of excommunication. They could only refuse to hold communion with those whose principles and practices they disliked. The magistrates affisted in those synods, not only to hear, but to deliberate and determine. From such a form as this, great religious freedom might, one would have imagined, be well expected. But the truth is, they had no idea at all of fuch a freedom. The very doctrine of any fort of toleration was fo odious to the greater part, that one of the first persecutions set up here, was against a small party which arose amongst themselves, who were hardy enough to maintain, that the civil magistrate had no lawful power to use compulsory measures in affairs of religion. After harraffing these people by all the vexatious ways imaginable, they obliged them to fly out

ol tle Cup w

ma wo me tha per Ne

this faci the I

fent

men show colo whe were use

of n that A laws religi

trived mucl drove

confi

ad reoned to theml into a endent withfionally are and e their feveral cife no ither as had no uld only le whose d. The not only termine. ous free-, be well had no he very was fo the first t a small es, who the civil use com-After

exatious

o fly out

SETTLEMENTS in AMERICA. of their jurisdiction. These emigrants settled themselves to the Southward, near Cape Cod, where they formed a new government upon their own principles, and built a town, which they called Providence. This has fince made the fourth and smallest, but not the worst inhabited of the New England governments, called Rhode Island, from an island of that name which forms a part of it. persecution gave rise to the first settlement of New England, so a subsequent persecution in this colony gave rife to new colonies, and this facilitated the spreading of the people over the country. If men, merely for the moderation of their

If men, merely for the moderation of their fentiments, were exposed to such severe treatment, it was not to be expected that others should escape unpunished. The very first colony had hardly set set its foot in America, when discovering that some amongst them were false brethren, and ventured to make use of the common prayer, they sound means of making the country so uneasy to them, that they were glad to sly back to England.

As foon as they began to think of making laws, I find no less than five about matters of religion; all contrived, and not only contrived, but executed in some respects with so much rigour, that the persecution which drove the puritans out of England, might be considered as great lenity and indulgence in

3 th

An ACCOUNT of the EUROPEAN 150 the comparison. For in the first of these laws, they deprive every one who does not communicate with their established church, of the right to his freedom, or a vote in the election of any of their magistrates. fecond, they fentence to banishment any who should oppose the fourth commandment, or deny the validity of infant baptism, or the authority of magistrates. In the third, they condemn quakers to banishment, and make it capital for them to return; and not stopping at the offenders, they lay heavy fines upon all who should bring them into the province, or even harbour them for an hour. In the fourth they provide banishment, and death in case of return, for jesuits and Popish priests of every denomination. In the fifth they decree death to any who shall worship images. After they had provided fuch a complete code of persecution, they were not long without opportunities of reading bloody lectures upon it. The quakers, warmed with that spirit which animates the beginning of most sects, had spread their doctrines all over the British dominions in Europe, and began at last to spread them with equal zeal in America. clergy and the magistrates in New England took the alarm; they seized upon some of those people, they set them in the stocks and in the pillory without effect; they scourged,

they imprisoned, they banished them; they

tro
th
pe
fla
fun
for
do
que
and
fuc
fan
had
five
me

Eng posi I fucl form

unk

ed,

Eng the bod veri

coul no they

pior

treated

f thefa

es not

rch, of

in the

In the

ny who

ent, or

or the

d, they

make it

topping

es upon

ovince,

In the

death in

n priests

they de-

images.

ete code

nout op-

upon it. t which

ets, had

tiih do-

o spread

England

some of

cks and

ourged, n; they treated

The

treated all those who seemed to commiserate their sufferings with great rigour; but their persecution had no other effect than to inflame their own cruelty and the zeal of the fufferers. The constancy of the quakers under their sufferings begot a pity and esteem for their persons, and an approbation of their doctrines; their proselytes increased; the quakers returned as fast as they were banished; and the fury of the ruling party was raised to fuch a height, that they proceeded to the most fanguinary extremities. Upon the law they had made, they feized at different times upon five of those who had returned from banishment, condemned and hanged them. It is unknown how far their madness had extended, if an order from the king and council in England about the year 1661 had not interposed to restrain them.

It is a task not very agreeable to insist upon such matters; but in reality, things of this nature form the greatest part of the history of New England, for a long time. They persecuted the anabaptists, who were no inconsiderable body amongst them, with almost an equal severity. In short, this people, who in England could not bear being chastisted with rods, had no sooner got free from their setters than they scourged their sellow resuges with scorpions; though the absurdity, as well as the

L 4

injustice

152 An ACCOUNT of the EUROPEAN injustice of such a proceeding in them, might stare them in the face!

One may observe, that men of all persuasions confine the word perfecution, and all the ill ideas of injustice and violence which belong to it, folely to those severities which are exercifed upon themselves, or upon the party they are inclined to favour. Whatever is inflicted upon others, is a just punishment upon obstinate impiety, and not a restraint upon conscientious differences. The persecution we have ourselves suffered, is a good ground for retaliation against an old enemy; and if one of our friends and fellow sufferers should prove so wicked as to quit our cause, and weaken it by his diffention, he deserves to be punished yet more than the old enemy himfelf. Besides this, the zealous never fail to draw political inferences from religious tenets, by which they interest the magistrate in the dispute; and then to the heat of a religious fervour is added the fury of a party zeal. intercourse is cut off between the parties. They lose all knowledge of each other, tho' countrymen and neighbours, and are therefore easily imposed upon with the most abfurd stories concerning each other's opinions and practices. They judge of the hatred of the adverse side by their own. Then fear is added to their hatred; and preventive injuries arite

ari th ill, th

lig ref tha rity mo reli its d upd wh kin mer peri perf piet forn acqu larie and give reali bad

belie

ing

gene

might

uations

l the ill belong e exerty they nflicted n obstion conion we und for if one should ise, and es to be y himfail to tenets, in the eligious All

er, tho'
thereoft abpinions
tred of

parties.

fear is njuries arife SETTLEMENTS in AMERICA. 153 arise from their fear. The remembrance of the past, the dread of the future, the present ill, will join together to urge them forward to the most violent courses.

Such is the manner of proceeding of religious parties towards each other; and in this respect the New England people are not worse than the rest of mankind, nor was their severity any just matter of reflection upon that mode of religion which they profess. religion whatsoever, true or false, can excuse its own members, or accuse those of any other upon the score of persecution. The principles which give rife to it are common to all mankind, and they influence them as they are men, and not as they belong to this or that persuasion. In all persuasions the bigots are persecutors; the men of a cool and reasonable piety are favourers of toleration; because the former fort of men not taking the pains to be acquainted with the grounds of their adverfaries tenets, conceive them to be so absurd and monstrous, that no man of sense can give into them in good earnest. For which reason they are convinced that some oblique bad motive induces them to pretend to the belief of fuch doctrines, and to the maintaining of them with obstinacy. This is a very general principle in all religious differences, and it is the corner stone of all persecution.

Befides

154 An ACCOUNT of the EUROPEAN

Besides the disputes with those of another denomination, the independents were for a long time harraffed with one in the bowels of their own churches. The stale dispute about grace and works produced diffentions, riots, and almost a civil war in the colony. famous Sir Henry Vane the younger, an enthusiastic, giddy, turbulent man, of a no very good disposition, came hither with some of the adventurers; and rather than remain idle, play'd at small games in New England, where the people had chosen him governor. not hard to conceive, how such a man, at the head of fuch a people, and engaged in fuch controverfy, could throw every thing into con-In the very height of this hopeful dispute they had a war upon their hands with fome of the Indian nations. Their country was terribly harraffed, and numbers were every day murdered by the incursions of the All this time they had an army in enemy. readiness for action, which they would not fuffer to march even to defend their own lives and possessions, because " many of the " officers and foldiers were under a covenant " of works."

CHAP.

Tb

fen per fell yet wh thre

fion

in t

they troutend pear ima he of the

He of 1

find

ufec

CHAP. IV.

The witchcraft delusion. Great cruelties. The madness ends in the accusation of the magistrates. Resections.

HEN the New England puritans began to breathe a little from these dissentions, and had their hands tied up from persecuting the quakers and anabaptists, they fell not long after into another madness of a yet more extraordinary and dangerous kind, which, like some epidemical disease, ran through the whole country, and which is perhaps one of the most extraordinary delusions recorded in history. This tragedy began in the year 1692.

There is a town in New England, which they fanatically called Salem. One Paris was the minister there. He had two daughters troubled with convulsions; which being attended with some of those extraordinary appearances, not unfrequent in such disorders, he imagined they were bewitched. As soon as he concluded upon witchcrast as the cause of the distemper, the next enquiry was how to find out the person who had bewitched them. He cast his eyes upon an Indian servant woman of his own, whom he frequently beat, and used her with such severity, that she at last confessed

нар.

another

e for a owels of

te about

ns, riots,

no very

some of

ain idle, d, where

r. It is

n, at the

l in such

into con-

hopeful nds with

country

rs were

army in

eir own

v of the

covenant

7. The an en-

156 An Account of the European confessed herself the witch, and was committed to goal, where she lay for a long time.

The imaginations of the people were not yet sufficiently heated to make a very formal business of this; therefore they were content to discharge her from prison after a long confinement, and to sell her as a slave for her sees.

However, as this example fet the discourse about witchcraft affoat, some people, troubled with a fimilar complaint, began to fancy themselves bewitched too. Persons in an ill state of health are naturally fond of finding out causes for their distempers; especially such as are extraordinary, and call the eyes of the public upon them. There was perhaps fomething of malice in the affair besides. For one of the first objects whom they fixed upon was Mr. Burroughs, a gentleman who had formerly been minister of Salem; but upon some of the religious disputes which divided the country, he differed with his flock, and left them. This man was tried with two others for witchcraft by a special commission of over and terminer, directed to some of the gentlemen of the best fortunes, and reputed to be of the best understandings in the country. Before these judges, a piece of evidence was delivered, the most weak and childish, the most repugnant to itself, and to common sense, that perhaps ever was known upon any ferious occafion.

fio and al and liv ing po bod ear wil littl the exe ftro mai mai llov

> affe upo idea acti cere mei

nati and Nei infi

nor spectors was

ommitime. vere not formal content a long lave for liscourse troubled y themill state ing out fuch as of the os fome-For one pon was formersome of e counft them. ers for of oyer gentleto be of Before livered, repughat per-

is occa-

fion.

SETTLEMENTS in AMERICA. 157 Yet by those judges, upon that evidence, and the verdict founded upon it, this minister, a man of a most unexceptionable character, and two others, men irreproachable in their lives, were fentenced to die, and accordingly hanged. Then these victims of the popular madness were stript naked, and their bodies thrown into a pit, half covered with earth, and left to the discretion of birds and wild beafts. Upon the same evidence in a little time after fixteen more suffered death, the greatest part of them dying in the most exemplary fentiments of piety, and with the firongest professions of their innocence. One man refusing to plead, suffered in the cruel manner the law directs on that occasion, by a flow pressure to death.

The imaginations of the people, powerfully affected by these shocking examples, turned upon nothing but the most gloomy and horrid ideas. The most ordinary and innocent actions were metamorphosed into magical ceremonies, and the sury of the people augmented in proportion as this gloom of imagination increased. The slame spread with rage and rapidity into every part of the country. Neither the tenderness of youth, nor the infirmity of age, nor the honour of the sex, nor the sacredness of the ministry, nor the respectable condition of fortune or character, was the least protection. Children of eleven

years

158 An ACCOUNT of the EUROPEAN

years old were taken up for forceries. The women were stripped in the most shameful manner to search them for magical teats. The scorbatic stains common on the skins of old persons, were called the devil's pinches. This was indisputable evidence against them. As such they admitted every idle slying report, and even stories of ghosts, which they honoured with a name, not found in cur law books. They called them Spectral Evidence.

What these extraordinary testimonies wanted was compleated by the torture; by which a number of these unhappy victims were driven to confess whatever their tormentors thought proper to dictate to them. Some women owned they had been lain with by the devil, and other things equally ridiculous

and abominable.

It is not difficult to imagine the deplorable state of this province, when all mens lives depended upon the caprice and folly of diseased and distracted minds; when revenge and malice had a full opportunity of wreaking themselves in a most dreadful and bloody manner, by an instrument that was always in readiness, and to which the public phrenzy gave a certain and dangerous effect. What was a yet worse circumstance, the wretches who suffered the torture, being not more present to own themselves guilty than to discover their associates and accomplices, unable

01

to

ran

and

ext

cor ed

wit

fled

par

peo

the

nun ed

who

crin

ploy

in it

was and

mil

of t

fect

inne

ven the

forc

she

·den

ing

thr

N The shameal teats. kins of inches. them. ing rech they cur law vidence. s wantwhich were nentors Some with by liculous plorable ves dediseased

bloody always phren-What retches e pres-

ge and

reaking

discounable

to

to give any real account, named people at random, who were immediately taken up, and treated in the same cruel manner upon this extorted evidence. An universal terror and consternation seized upon all. Some prevented accusation, and charged themselves with witchcraft, and fo escaped death. fled the province; and many more were preparing to fly. The prisons were crouded; people were executed daily; yet the rage of the accusers were was as fresh as ever, and the number of the witches and the bewitched increased every hour. A magistrate who had committed forty persons for this crime, fatigued with fo difagreeable an employment, and ashamed of the share he had in it, refused to grant any more warrants. He was himself immediately accused of sorcery; and thought himself happy in leaving his family and fortune, and escaping with life out A jury struck with the afof the province. fecting manner, and the folemn affurances of innocence of a woman brought before them, ventured to acquit her, but the judges fent them in again; and in an imperious manner forced them to find the woman guilty, and the was hanged immediately.

The magistrates and ministers, whose prudence ought to have been employed in healing this distemper, and assuaging its fury, threw in new combustible matter.

encouraged

160 An ACCOUNT of the EUROPEAN

encouraged the accusers; they affisted at the examinations, and they extorted the confesfions of witches. None fignalized their zeal more upon this occasion than Sir William Phips the governor, a New England man, of the lowest birth, and yet meaner education; who having raifed a fudden fortune by a lucky accident, was knighted, and afterwards made governor of the province. Doctor Encrease Mather, and Doctor Cotton Mather, the pillars of the New England church, were equally fanguine. Several of the most popular ministers after twenty executions had been made, addressed Sir William Phips with thanks for what he had done, and with exhortations to proceed in fo laudable a work.

The accusers encouraged in this manner did not know where to stop, nor how to proceed. They were at a loss for objects. They began at last to accuse the judges themselves. What was worse, the nearest relations of Mr. Encrease Mather were involved, and witchcrast we began even to approach the governor's own It was now high time to give things another turn. The accusers were discouraged by authority. One hundred and fifty who lay in prison, were discharged. hundred more were under accusation; they were passed over; and those who had received fentence of death, were reprieved, and in due time pardonud. A few cool moments shewed

tha utto wer Th don the mili perf pray ferv amo

> enth fit c the like have

der minotions neve is or out prevent is In fuincoi and

defig

161

d at the confest villiam man, of ucation; a lucky ds made Encrease

er, the h, were it populated been ps with with ex-

work.
nner did
proceed.
y began

. What Ar. Enitchcraft or's own e things discou-

nd fifty

n; they receivand in noments shewed

shewed them the gross and stupid error that had carried them away, and which was utterly invisible to them all the while they were engaged in this strange prosecution. They grew heartily ashamed of what they had done. But what was infinitely mortifying, the quakers took occasion to attribute all this mischief to a judgment on them for their persecution. A general fast was appointed; praying God to pardon all the errors of his servants and people in a late tragedy, raised amongst them by Satan and his instruments.

This was the last paroxism of the puritanic enthusiasm in New England. This violent sit carried off so much of that humour, that the people there are now grown somewhat like the rest of mankind in their manners, and have much abated of their persecuting spirit.

It is not an incurious speculation to consider these remarkable sallies of the human mind, out of its ordinary course. Whose nations are often carried away by what would never influence one man of sense. The cause is originally weak, and to be suppressed without great difficulty; but then its weakness prevents any suspicion of the mischief, until it is too late to think of suppressing it at all. In such cases the more weak, improbable, and inconsistent any story is, the more powerful and general is its effect, being helped on by design in some, by folly in others, and kept up Vol. II.

162 An ACCOUNT of the EUROPEAN

by contagion in all. The more extraordinary the defign, the more dreadful the crime, the less we examine into the proofs. The charge and the evidence of some things is the same. However, in some time the minds of people cool, and they are astonished how they ever came to be so affected.

CHAP. V.

The situation, climate, &c. of New England.

Indian corn described. Cattle of New England.

THE events in the history of New England, their disputes with their governors, the variations in their charters, and their wars with the Indians afford very little useful or agreeable matter. In their wars there was very little conduct shewn; and though they prevailed in the end, in a manner to the extirpation of that race of people, vet the Indians had always great advantages in the beginning; and the measures of the English to oppose them, were generally injudiciously Their manner too of treating them in the beginning was fo indifcreet (for it was in ger arol no worse) as to provoke them as much to dose wars, as the French influence has done fince that time.

The

is in mild dred are the not mild

45tl it is fun begi para fum vent fame the l derai respe their wood wher carrie fo pr tants. both

feren

the a

heavy

The country which we call New England, is in length something less than three hundred miles; at the broadest part it is about two hundred, if we carry it on to those tracts which are possessed by the French; but if we regard the part we have settled, in general, it does not extend any where much above sixty miles from the sea coast.

This country lies between the 41st and 45th degrees of North latitude. Though it is fituated almost ten degrees nearer the fun than we are in England, yet the winter begins earlier, lasts longer, and is incomparably more fevere than it is with us. fummer again is extremely hot, and more fervently fo than in places which lie under the fame parallels in Europe. However, both the heat and the cold are now far more moderate, and the constitution of the air in all respects far better than our people found it at their first settlement. The clearing away the woods, and the opening the ground every where, has, by giving a free passage to the air, carried off those noxious vapours which were fo prejudicial to the health of the first inhabitants. The temper of the fky is generally both in fummer and in winter very steady and ferene. Two months frequently pass without the appearance of a cloud. Their rains are heavy and foon over.

The

ngland.

w Eng-

w Eng-

gover-

rs, and

ry little

ir wars

n; and

a man-

people,

tages in

ne Eng-

icioufly

them in

was in

ls much

hce has

M 2

The

164 An Account of the European

The foil of New England is various, but best as you approach the Southward. It affords excellent meadows in the low grounds, and very good pasture almost every where. They commonly allot at the rate of two acres The meadows to the maintenance of a cow. which they reckon the best, yield about a ton of hay by the acre. Some produce two tons, but the hay is rank and four. This country it not very favourable to any of the European kinds of grain. The wheat is subject to be blasted; the barley is an hungry grain, and the oats are lean and chaffy But the Indian corn, which makes the general food of the lowest fort of people, flourishes here. This, as it is a species of grain not so univerfally known in England, and as it is that of all others which yields the greatest increase, I shall give a short description of it.

This plant, which the native Americans call the weachin, is known in forne of the Southern parts of America by the name of maize. The ear is about a span in length, consisting of eight rows of the corn, or more, according to the goodness of the ground, with about thirty grains in each row. On the top of the grain hangs a sort of slower, not unlike a tassel of silk, of various colours, white, blue, greenish, black, speckled, striped, which gives this corn as it grows a very beautiful appearance. The grain is of all the colours which prevail

1

in wh and are No tho are join that

as fv

fquation is lig of lo an a twer ple in they conto their the fpruc

other and l been Cowcomr

ed.

s, but d. It ounds, where. o acres eadows about roduce This of the t is fubhungry y But general ourishes n not fo as it is greatest on of it. nericans e Southf maize. isting of rding to ut thirty he grain taffel of reenish, ves this

earance.

h prevail

in

SETTLEMENTS in AMERICA. 1(5) in the flower, but most frequently yellow and white. The stalks grow six or eight feet high, and are of a considerable thickness. They are less high in New England, and other Northern countries, than in Virginia and those which lie more to the Southward. They are jointed like a cane, and at each of these joints shoot out a number of leaves like flags, that make very good fodder for the cattle. The stalk is full of a juice, of which a syrup as sweet as sugar has been frequently made.

This grain is generally fowed in little squares, and requires a very attentive cultivation. The ground in which it flourishes most is light and sandy, with a small intermixture of loam. About a peck of seed is sufficient for an acre, which at a medium produces about twenty-five bushels. The New England people not only make bread of this grain, but they malt and brew it into a beer, which is not contemptible. However, the greater part of their beer is made of molasses, hopped; with the addition sometimes of the tops of the spruce fir insused.

They raise in New England, besides this and other species of grain, a large quantity of flax, and have made essays upon hemp, that have been far from unsuccessful. An acre of their Cow-pen land produces about a ton of this commodity; but the land is pretty soon exhausted. This plant probably requires a climate

M₃ mor

more uniformly warm than New England; for though the greater part of our hemp is brought to us from Northern ports, yet it is in the more Southerly provinces of Russia, that the best which comes to our market is produced.

Their horned cattle are very numerous in New England, and fome of them very large. Oxen have been killed there of eighteen hundred weight. Hogs likewise are numerous, and particularly excellent; and some so large as to weigh twenty-five fcore. They have besides, a breed of small horses, which are extremely hardy. They pace naturally, though in no very graceful or easy manner, but with fuch swiftness, and for so long a continuance, as must appear almost incredible to those who have not experienced it. They have a great number of sheep too, and of a good kind. The wool is of a staple sufficiently long, but it is not near fo fine as that of England. However, they manufacture a great deal of it very fuccessfully. I have feen cloths made there, which were of as close and firm a contexture, tho' not fo fine, as our best drabs; they were thick, and, as far as I could judge, superior for the ordinary wear of country people, to any thing we make in England.

CHAP.

Pet

wh flev the mai with den hole

way beir

orig

inhe
It m
war
try,
in la
gen

verr fpiri fort

thei they

CHAP. VI.

People of New England. Their numbers. Hiftory of the charters of the colonies here, and the forfeiture of some.

THERE are in this country many gentlemen of confiderable landed estates, which they let to farmers, or manage by their stewards or overseers; but the greater part of the people is composed of a substantial yeomanry who cultivate their own freeholds, without a dependence upon any but Providence and their own industry. These freeholds generally pass to their children in the way of gavelkind; which keeps them from being almost ever able to emerge out of their original happy mediocrity. This manner of inheriting has here an additional good effect. It makes the people the more ready to go backward into the uncultivated parts of the country, where land is to be had at an easy rate and in larger portions. The people by their being generally freeholders, and by their form of government, have a very free, bold, and republican spirit. In no part of the world are the ordinary fort so independent, or possess so many of the conveniencies of life; they are used from their infancy to the exercise of arms; and they have a militia, which for a militia is by M 4 no

are exthough at with nuance, those have a

id; for

rought in the

iat the

rous in large.

n hun-

nerous,

o large

y have

iced.

d kind.

but it

Howit very

e there, texture, by were trior for

to any

HAP.

168 An Account of the European

no means contemptible; and certainly if these men were somewhat more regularly trained, and in better subordination, it would be impossible to find in any country, or in any time ancient or modern, an army better constituted than that which New England can furnish. This too is much the best peopled of any of our colonies upon the continent. It is judged that the four provinces which it comprises, contain about three hundred and fifty thousand souls, including a very small number of blacks and Indians; the rest are whites. Douglass, who seems to be well informed in this point, proportions them as follow,

Massachusets bay,	200,000
Connecticut,	100,000
Rhode Island,	30,000
New Hampshire,	24,000
	354,000

These four governments are confederated for their common desence. We have shewn how these several governments have arisen. The most considerable of them for riches and number of people, though not for extent of territory, is Massachusets bay. This province like the others had originally a power of chusing every one of their own magistrates; the governor, the council, the assembly,—all; and

and per, prot of H end werd wari The lutio the r thou the e whic ny, deper crow tenan law a the ci cil is c yet th him prero three king must do no three

and a

are to

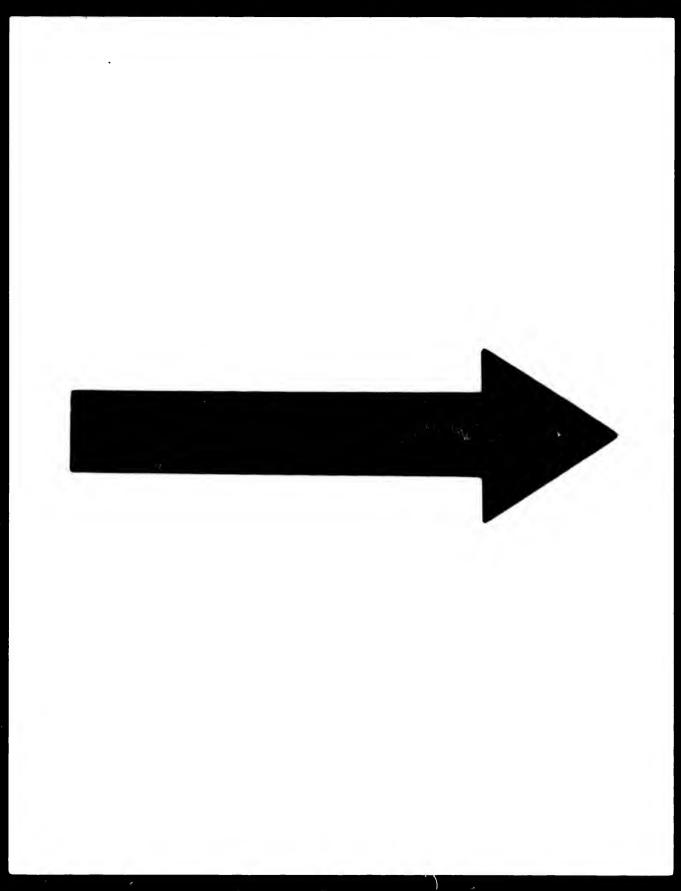
king's

f these rained, be imported that the districted that any of judged apprises, thousaber of whites. med in

00

lerated shewn arisen. riches extent s prower of trates; —all; and

SETTLEMENTS in AMERICA. and of making fuch laws as they thought proper, without fending them home for the approbation of the crown. But being accused of having abused this freedom, in the latter end of the reign of Charles the second, they were deprived of it by a judgment in a quo warranto in the king's bench in England. They remained from that time to the revolution without any charter. Some time after the revolution they received a new one, which though very favourable, was much interior to the extensive privileges of the former charter, which indeed were too extensive for a colony, and what left little more than a nominal dependence on the mother country, and the crown itself. But now, the governor, lieutenant governor, and the chief places of the law and in the revenue, are in the disposal of the crown; fo is the militia; and tho' the councilis chosen by the representatives of the people, yet the governor has a negative which gives him an influence, sufficient to preserve the prerogative entire. Appeals for sums above three hundred pounds are admitted to the king and council, and all laws passed here must be remitted to England; where if they do not receive a negative from the crown in three years, they are to be confidered as valid, and are to have the effect of laws; which they are to have likewise until the time that the king's resolution is known. But one point has



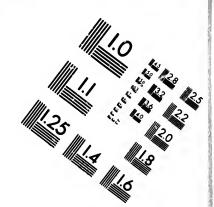
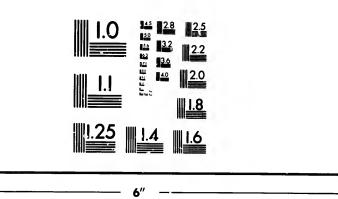


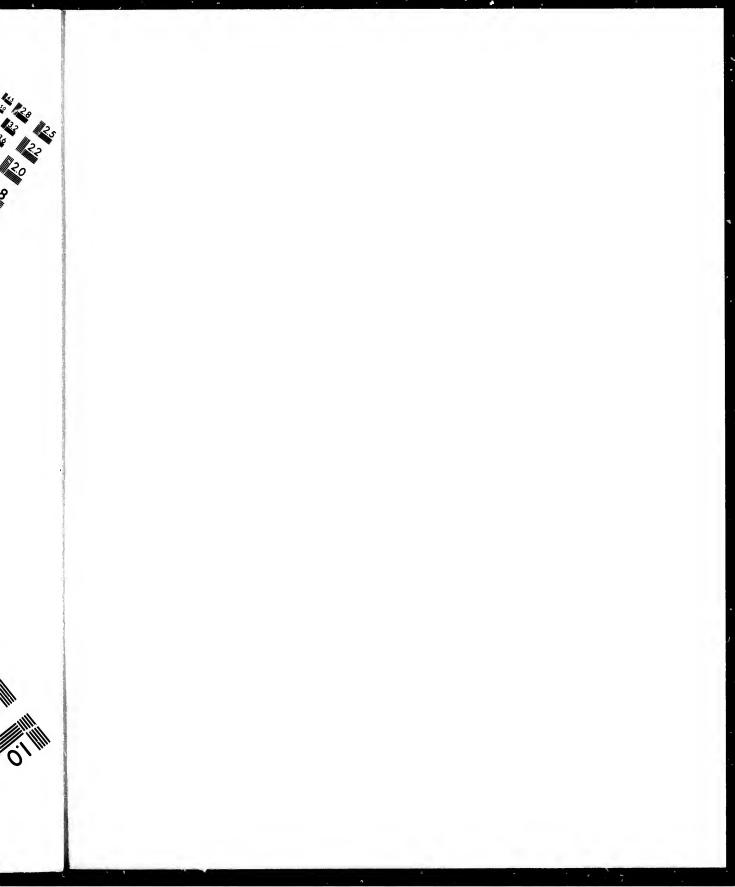
IMAGE EVALUATION TEST TARGET (MT-3)



Photographic Sciences Corporation

23 WEST MAIN STREET WEBSTER, N.Y. 14580 (716) 872-4503

STATE OF THE STATE



170 An Account of the European

has been long and resolutely disputed in this colony; the grant of a certain salary to their governor. Many attempts have been made to induce them to this measure; but to no effect. They think a dependence on the people for his salary the most effectual method of restraining the governor from any unpopular acts. To the Massachusets government is united the ancient colony of Plymouth, and the territory which is called Main.

The colony of Connecticut, which lies upon a river of the same name to the South of this province, has preserved its ancient privileges, which are now as considerable as those of Massachusets were formerly. At the time that the charter of the former was attacked, that of this government was threatened with the same sate. But they agreed to submit to the king's pleasure; therefore, no judgment was given against them; and being found in this condition at the revolution, it was judged that they were in full possession of their old charter, and have so continued ever since.

The third and smallest of the provinces which compose New England, is Rhode Island. This consists of a small island of that name, and the old plantation of Providence. These united plantations had a charter the same with that of Connecticut, and they have preserved it by the same method. In this province

pro agre tion ext

> mu bite for is a the and cou

> > Bofi 1

dand and are The the pear

gen rian NΑ

ople for l of repopular
nent is
th, and

ich lies e South ancient erable as At the

s attackreatened I to fubfore, no id being

ution, it offession ontinued

rovinces

Rhode
I of that
vidence,
the fame
ey have
In this

province

province is an unlimited freedom of religion, agreeable to the first principles of its foundation; and though very small, it is from thence extremely well peopled.

New Hampshire, the fourth province, is much the largest of them all; but not inhabited in proportion. This is more Northerly for the greater part than any of the rest. It is a royal government; that is, the crown has the nomination of all the officers of justice and of the militia, and the appointment of the council.

CHAP. VII.

Boston, its harbour. Trade. Ship-building. Distillery. Foreign trassic. Restections on the scheme of limiting it. Declension of the trade of New England.

THERE is not one of our fettlements which can be compared in the abundance of people, the number of confiderable and trading towns, and the manufactures that are carried on in them, to New England. The most populous and flourishing parts of the mother country hardly make a better appearance. Our provinces to the Southward on this continent are recommendable for the generous warmth of the climate, and a luxuriance of soil which naturally throws up a vast variety

An ACCOUNT of the EUROPEAN variety of beautiful and rich vegetable productions; but New England is the first in America, for cultivation, for the number of people, and for the order which results from both.

Though there are in all the provinces of New England large towns which drive a confiderable trade, the only one which can deferve to be much infifted upon in a defign like ours, is Boston; the capital of Massachufets bay, the first city of New England, and of all North America. This city is fituated on a peninfula, at the bottom of a fine capacious and fafe harbour, which is defended from the outrages of the sea, by a number of islands, and rocks which appear above water. entered but by one fafe passage; and that is narrow, and covered by the cannon of a regular and very strong fortress. The harbour is more than sufficient for the great number of veffels, which carry on the extensive trade of At the bottom of the bay is a noble pier, near two thousand feet in length, along which on the North fide extends a row of warehouses. The head of this pier joins the principal street of the town, which is, like most of the others, spacious and well built. The town lies at the bottom of the harbour, and forms a very agreeable view. It has a town house, where the courts meet, and the exchange is kept, large, and of a very tolerable taste of architecture. Round the exchange, are a lers print with twen

Tiudg obser mas from four to fa both faid . deed **fupp** itself this c all t Wef rope. **fpect**

> are they pitch board ter : and apple

not v

SETTLEMENTS in AMERICA. 173 are a great number of well furnished booksellers shops, which find employment for five printing presses. There are ten churches within this town; and it contains at least twenty thousand inhabitants.

That we may be enabled to form fome judgment of the wealth of this city, we must observe that from Christmas 1747, to Christmas 1748, five hundred vessels cleared out, from this port only, for a foreign trade; and four hundred and thirty were entered inwards; to fay nothing of coasting and fishing vessels, both of which are extremely numerous, and faid to be equal in number to the others. deed the trade of New England is great, as it fupplies a large quantity of goods from within itself; but it is yet greater, as the people of this country are in a manner the carriers for all the colonies of North America and the West-Indies, and even for some parts of Eu-They may be confidered in this respect as the Dutch of America.

The commodities which the country yields are principally masts and yards, for which they contract largely with the royal navy; pitch, tar and turpentine; staves, lumber, boards; all forts of provisions, beef, pork, butter and cheese, in large quantities; horses and live cattle; Indian corn and pease; cyder, apples, hemp and slax. Their peltry trade is not very considerable. They have a very noble cod

are

roduc-

Ame-

people,

nces of

a con-

an dedefign

Machund, and

fituated

capacied from

islands,

. It is

that is

a regu-

bour is nber of

trade of

a noble

, along

row of pins the

is, like

l built.

arbour,

t has a

and the

olerable change,

oth.

An Account of the European cod fishery upon their coast, which employs a vast number of their people; they are enabled by this to export annually above thirtytwo thousand quintals of choice cod fish, to Spain, Italy, and the Mediterranean, and about nineteen thousand quintals of the refuse fort to the West-Indies, as food for the negroes. The quantity of spirits, which they distil in Boston from the molasses they bring in from all parts of the West-Indies, is as surprising as the cheap rate at which they vend it, which is under two shillings a gallon. this they supply almost all the consumption of our colonies in North America, the Indian trade there, the vast demands of their own and the Newfoundland fishery, and in great measure those of the African trade; but they are more famous for the quantity and cheapness, than for the excellency of their rum.

They are almost the only one of our colonies which have much of the woollen and linen manufactures. Of the former they have nearly as much as suffices for their own cloathing. It is a close and strong, but a coarse stubborn sort of cloth. A number of presbyterians from the North of Ireland, driven thence, as it is said, by the severity of their landlords, from an affinity in religious sentiments chose New England as their place of refuge. Those people brought with them their

their meet cifed At p a ver is in calle Engl good ting great as the in fo migh try, refou the c ing t of it ceffity buildi

> the ca Th most sea-po Ships sion; Engla own a duce of

ploys a re enathirty-fish, to an, and e refuse negroes. listil in in from rprising rend it,

imption ie Indieir own in great de; but tity and of their

ur cololen and
er they
leir own
, but a
mber of
nd, drivof their
is fentiplace of
h them
their

SETTLEMENTS in AMERICA. their skill in the linen manufactures, meeting very large encouragement, they exercifed it to the great advantage of this colony. At present they make large quantities, and of a very good kind; their principal settlement is in a town, which in compliment to them is called Londonderry. Hats are made in New England which in a clandestine way find a good vent in all the other colonies. The fetting up these manufactures has been in a great measure a matter necessary to them; for as they have not been properly encouraged in fome staple commodity, by which they might communicate with their mother country, while they were cut off from all other resources, they must either have abandoned the country, or have found means of employing their own skill and industry to draw out of it the necessaries of life. The same neceffity, together with their convenience for building and manning ships, has made them the carriers for the other colonies,

The business of ship-building is one of the most considerable which Boston or the other sea-port towns in New England carry on. Ships are sometimes built here upon commission; but frequently, the merchants of New England have them constructed upon their own account; and loading them with the produce of the colony, naval stores, fish, and fish-oil principally, they send them out upon a tra-

ding

176 An Account of the European

ding voyage to Spain, Portugal, or the Mediterranean, where having disposed of their cargo they make what advantage they can by freight, until fuch time as they can fell the veffel herself to advantage, which they seldom fail to do in a reasonable time. They receive the value of the vessel, as well as of the freight of the goods, which from time to time they carried, and of the cargo with which they failed originally, in bills of exchange upon London; for as the people of New England have no commodity to return for the value of above a hundred thousand pounds, which they take in various forts of goods from England, but fome naval stores, and those in no great quantities, they are obliged to keep the ballance fomewhat even by this circuitous commerce, which though not carried on with Great Britain nor with British vessels, yet centers in its profits, where all the money which the colonies can make in any manner, must center at last.

I know that complaints have been made of this trade, principally because the people of New England, not satisfied with carrying out their own produce, become carriers for the other colonies, particularly for Virginia and Maryland, from whom they take tobacco, which, in contempt of the act of navigation, they carry directly to the foreign market. Where, not having the duty and accumulated charges to which the British merchant is liable

to p the plair Nev and fuga enal nal fell : which from duct rum fale o prov island their wife a ma of fi find with Old

> comp ture: that Frengars tirely very

0

N Medif their can by e vessel om fail eive the eight of iey cary failed ondon: have no f above ey take nd, but t quanballance nmerce, t Britain its procolonies at last. n made eople of ring out for the inia and obacco, igation, market. mulated

is liable

to

SETTLEMENTS in AMERICA. 177 to pay, they in a manner wholly out him of Again, our fugar colonies comthe trade. plain as loudly, that the vast trade which New England drives in lumber, live stock and provisions with the French and Dutch fugar islands, particularly with the former. enables these islands, together with the internal advantages they possess, greatly to underfell the English plantations. That the returns which the people of New England make from these islands being in sugar, or the productions of fugar, fyrups and molasses, the rum which is thence distilled prevents the fale of our West-India rum. That this trade proves doubly disadvantagecus to our sugar islands; first, as it enables the French to sell their fugars cheaper than they could otherwise afford to do; and then as it finds them a market for their molasses, and other refuse of fugars, for which otherwise they could find no market at all; because rum interferes with brandy, a confiderable manufacture of Old France.

These considerations were the ground of a complaint made by the islands to the legislature in England some years ago. They desired that the exportation of lumber, &c. to the French colonies, and the importation of sugars and molasses from thence, might be entirely prohibited. This was undoubtedly a very nice point to settle. On one hand, the Vol. II.

An ACCOUNT of the EUROPEAN growth of the French West-Indies was manifest and alarming, and it was not to be thought that the French would ever wink at this trade, if it had not been of the greatest advantage to them. On the other hand, the Northern colonies declared, that if they were deprived of so great a branch of their trade, it must necessitate them to the establishment For if they were cut off of manufactures. from their foreign trade, they never could purchase in England the many things for the use or the ornament of life, which they have from thence. Besides this, the French deprived of the provision and lumber of New England, n:ust of necessity take every measure to be supplied from their own colonies, which would answer their purposes better, if they could accomplish it, at the same time that it would deprive the New England people of a large and profitable branch of their trade.

These points, and many more, were fully discussed upon both sides. The legislature took a middle course. They did not entirely prohibit the carrying of lumber to the French islands, but they laid a considerable duty upon whatever rum, fugars or molasses they should import from thence, to enhance by this means the price of lumber, and other necessaries to the French, and by laying them under difficulties, to fet the English sugar plantations in

fome

forme their

T lation Miffi was : be fu thene Louis tate th ver, that, own, lo ma instan last st tion o taugh to an as mu

ern p a grea but th receiv no wa vigation

feen a

Frenc

windy

SETTLEMENTS in AMERICA. 179 some measure upon an equal footing with theirs.

This was undoubtedly a very prudent regu-For though it was urged, that the Missippi navigation was so bad, that there was no prospect that the French could ever be supplied with lumber and provisions from thence; and that there were no fnows in Louisiana, the melting of which might facilitate the transportation of lumber into that river, yet it was by no means fafe to trust to that, so as utterly to destroy a trade of our own, which employed so much shipping, and so many sailors. Because we have a thousand instances, wherein the driving people to the last streights, and putting them under the tuition of such a master as absolute necessity, has taught them inventions, and excited them to an industry, which have compassed things as much regretted at last, as they were unforefeen at first.

Though no great snows fall in the Southern parts of Louisiana, yet to the Northward a great deal falls, and not only the Missisppi, but the number of other great rivers which it receives, overflow annually, and they can be in no want of timber convenient enough to navigation. And though the passage to the French islands be for such a great way to the windward, as to bring them these commodi-

s mato be ink at reatest d, the were trade, hment cut off

could

for the

y have

depri-

v Engsure to which if they that it ole of a de.

re fully re took prohi-French ty upon should s means aries to er diffitions in fome

An ACCOUNT of the EUROPEAN ties in a more tedious manner, and at a dearer rate, is it not much better that they should have them cheap from us than dear from themselves? Nor perhaps would even this difficulty, which is indeed much less than it is represented, bring down the French to the par of our fugar colonies, loaded as they are with taxes, groaning under the pressure of many grievances, and deformed by an infinite multitude of abuses and enormities; nor can they with reason or justice hope for a cure of the evils which they fuffer, partly from errors of their own, and partly from mistakes in England, at the expence of the trade of their fifter colonies on the continent of America, who are entirely guiltless of their sufferings; nor is it by restraints on their trade, but by an effectual and judicious encouragement of their own, that they can hope to remedy these evils, and rival the French establishments.

The French, in permitting us to supply them, it is true, give us a proof that they have advantages from this trade; but this is no proof at all that we derive none from it; for on that supportion no trade could be mutually beneficial. Nor is it at all certain, as it has been suggested, that if we left their result of sugars upon their hands, that they could turn them to no profit. If the council of commerce could be made to see distinctly that this trade could not prejudice the sale of their brandy,

br ru be w of val COI the ver pre infl dif the ma par tion

Low Can cation what Cay cert wou strain to be to terest

anot

Wol

brandy, and would only make the trade of rum change hands, as the case probably would be; and if they could shew, as they might, what a loss it must be to them entirely to throw away a confiderable part of the produce of their lands, and which was formerly fo valuable to them, there is no doubt but the court would give sufficient encouragement to their own plantations to distil rum, and to vend it in fuch a manner as might the least prejudice the brandies of France; and then, instead of sending us molasses, as they could distil the spirit far cheaper than our islands, they would fend us the spirit itself; and we may know by experience, especially in that part of the world, how infufficient all regulations are to prevent a counterband, which would be so gainful to particulars.

After all, are we certain, that the French would trust for the supply of their islands to Louisiana, or to the precarious supplies from Canada? would they not redouble their application, now made necessary, to Cape Breton? what experiments would they not make in Cayenne for the timber trade? they would certainly try every method, and probably would succeed in some of their trials. Restraints upon trade are nice things; and ought to be well considered. Great care ought to be taken in all such how we sacrifice the interests of one part of our territories to those of another; and it would be a mistake of the

N

most

of upply at they t this is from it; be mubin, as it ir refuse y could uncil of ctly that of their

brandy,

dearer

should

from

en this

than it

to the

ney are

fure of

infinite

nor can

cure of

om er-

nistakes

trade of

f Ame-

ir suffe-

r trade.

ourage-

An ACCOUNT of the EUROPEAN

most fatal consequence, if we came to think that the shipping, seamen, commodities, or wealth of the British colonies, were not effectually the shipping, seamen, and wealth of Great Britain herself. Sentiments of another

kind have frequently done us mischief.

The general plan of our management with regard to the trade of our colonies, methinks, ought to be, to encourage in every one of them some separate and distinct articles, such as not interfering, might enable them to trade with each other, and all to trade to advantage with their mother country. And then, where we have rivals in any branch of the trade carried on by our colonies, to enable them to fend their goods to the foreign market directly; using at the same time the wise precaution which the French put in practice, to make the ships so employed take the English ports in their way home; for our great danger is, that they should in that case make their returns in foreign manufactures, against which we cannot guard too carefully. This, and that they should not go largely into manufactures interfering with ours, ought to be the only points at which our restrictions should aim. These purposes ought not to be compassed by absolute prohibitions and penalties, which would be unpolitical and unjust, but by the way of diversion, by encouraging them to fall into fuch things as find a demand with ourselves

our Brit COIT eacl will thar and

I strai Eng be d man and deep neve fron and fupr drav able clear bran four Bost 632 twer mak ping Hov

info

has (

think
es, or
effeclth of
nother

t with hinks. them as not e with e with ere we carried o fend rectly: aution ke the orts in s, that eturns ch we d that actures e only l aim. passed which by the

em to

d with

rselves

ourselves at home. By this means Great Britain and all its dependencies will have a common interest, they will mutually play into each other's hands, and the trade so dispersed, will be of infinitely more advantage to us, than if all its several articles were produced and manufactured within ourselves.

I venture on these hints concerning restraints on trade, because in fact that of New England rather wants to be supported than to be checked by fuch restraints. Its trade in many of its branches is clearly on the decline; and this circumstance ought to interest us deeply; for very valuable is this colony, if it never fent us any thing, nor took any thing from us, as it is the grand barrier of all the rest; and as it is the principal magazine which supplies our West-Indies, from whence we draw fuch vast advantages. That this valuable colony is far from advancing, will appear clearly from the state of one of the principal branches of its trade, that of ship-building, for four years. In the year 1738 they built at Boston forty-one topsail vessels, burthen in all 6324 tons; in 1743 only thirty; in 46 but twenty; in 49 they were reduced to fifteen, making in the whole but 2450 tons of shipping; in such a time an astonishing declension! How it has been fince I have not fufficient information; but allowing that the decline has ceased here, yet this is surely sufficient to ſet 184 An ACCOUNT of the EUROPEAN fet us upon the nicest enquiry into the cause of that decay, and the most effectual measures to retrieve the affairs of so valuable a province; particularly, if by any ill-judged or ill-intended schemes, or by any misgovernment this mischief has happened them.

CHAP. VIII.

New York, New Jersey, and Pensylvania. Description of their situation, &c. Short account of their settlement.

T is not certainly known at what time the Swedes and Dutch made their first establishment in North America; but it was certainly posterior to our settlement in Virginia, and prior to that of New England. Swedes, who were no confiderable naval power, had hardly fixt the rudiments of a colony there than they deferted it. The inhabitants, without protection or affiftance, were glad to enter into a coalition with the Dutch that had fettled there upon a better plan, and to submit to the government of the States. The whole tract possessed or claimed by the two nations, whose two colonies were now grown into one, extended from the 38th to the 41st degree of latitude, all along the sea coast. They called it Nova Belgia, or New Netherlands. It continued in their hands until the reign of Charles the

the out, thre whice to ga A li fell Amd fame Neth was that were New time, exch made of th nies, of a best tions, ing v try;

> our j distinappel

place

thy,

meaable a ged or

lvania. Short

me the t estaas cerirginia,

The l pow-colony bitants, glad to hat had fubmit whole lations, to one, gree of called

Charles the

It con-

SETTLEMENTS in AMERICA. 185 the fecond. The Dutch war then breaking out, in the year 1664 Sir Robert Car with three thousand men was sent to reduce it, which he did with fo little resistance, as not to gain him any great honour by the conquest. A little after, the Dutch by way of reprifal fell upon our colony of Surinam in South America, and conquered it after much the fame opposition that we met in the New Netherlands. By the treaty of peace which was figned at Breda, in 1667, it was agreed that things should remain in the state they were at that time; Surinam to the Dutch, the New Netherlands to the English. At that time, this was looked upon by many as a bad exchange; but it now appears, that we have made an excellent bargain; for to fay nothing of the great disadvantage of having our colonies, as it were, cut in two by the intervention of a foreign territory; this is now one of the best peopled and richest parts of our plantations, extremely useful to the others, and making very valuable returns to the mother country; whereas Surinam is comparatively a place of very small consequence, very unhealthy, and by no art to be made otherwise.

The New Netherlands were not long in our possession before they were divided into distinct provinces, and laid aside their former appellation. The North-East part which joined New England, was called New York,

in

186 An ACCOUNT of the EUROPEAN

in compliment to the duke of York, who had at first the grant of the whole territory. This province runs up to the Northward on both sides of the river Hudson, for about two hundred miles into the country of the Five Nations or Iroquois; but it is not in any part above forty or fifty miles wide. It comprehends within its limits Long Island, which lies to the South of Connecticut, and is an island inferior to no part of America in excellent ground for the pasturage of horses, oxen, and sheep, or the plentiful produce of every fort of grain.

The part of Nova Belgia, which lay along the ocean, between that and the river Delawar, from the Southern part of New York quite down to Maryland, was granted to Si George Carteret and others, and called New Jersey from him, because he had, as the family still has, estates in the island of that name. This province is bounded upon the West by the river Delawar, which divides it from Pensylvania. It is in length about one hundred and fifty miles, or thereabouts, and about

fifty in breadth.

Penfylvania, which lies between New York,
New Jerfey, and Maryland, and only communicates with the fea by the mouth of the river
Delawar, is in length about two hundred and
fifty miles, and in breadth two hundred.
This territory was granted to the famons Mr.

William

Will adm T

of I adm In a Ame is in confi into of m the n The in ge only in al from of fo world it in lars; every have sheep

abour

fully

a kin

relish

equal

only f

herbs

SETTLEMENTS in AMERICA. 187 William Pen, the fon of Sir William Pen the admiral, in the year 1680.

The climate and soil in the three provinces of New York, New Jerriey, and Penfylvania, admits of no very remarkable difference. In all these, and indeed in all our North American colonies, the land near the fea is in general low, flat and marshy; at a considerable distance from the sea it swells into little hills, and then into great even ridges of mountains, which hold their course, for the most part, North-East, and South-West. The foil throughout these three provinces is in general extremely fruitful; abounding not only in its native grain the Indian corn, but in all fuch as have been naturalized there from Europe. Wheat in such abundance, and of so excellent a quality, that few parts of the world, for the tract which is cultivated, exceed it in the one or the other of these particulars; nor in barley, oats, rye, buck-wheat, and every fort of grain which we have here. They have a great number of horned cattle, horses, sheep, and hogs. All our European poultry abound there; game of all kinds is wonderfully plenty; deer of feveral species; hares of kind peculiar to America, but inferior in relish to ours; wild turkies of a vast size, and equal goodness; a beautiful species of pheasants, only found in this country. Every species of herbs or roots which we force in our gardens.

who had. This on both wo hunive Nany part comprenich lies

n island

xcellent

en, and

ery fort

y along er Delaw York ed to Si ed New

we famiat name. West by it from ne hunnd about

w York, commuthe river and undred. ons Mr. William

188 An ACCOUNT of the EUROPEAN

dens, grow here with great ease; and every species of fruit; but some, as those of peaches

and melons, in far greater perfection,

Their forests abound in excellent timber, the oak, the ash, the beech, the chesnut, the cedar, the walnut, the cypress, the hickory, the fassafras, and the pine. In all parts of our plantations, comprehending New York to the Northward, quite to the Southern extremity, the woods are full of wild vines of three or four species, all different from those we have in Europe. But whether from some fault in their nature, or in the climate, or the foil where they grow, or, what is much more probable, from a fault in the planters, they have yet produced no wine that deserves to be mentioned. It may be remarked in general of the timber of these provinces, that it is not so good for shipping as that of New England and Nova Scotia. The further Southward you go, the timber becomes less compact, and rives easily; which property, as it makes it more useful for staves, renders it less ferviceable for ships.

They raise in all these provinces, but much the most largely in Pensylvania, great quantities of flax; hemp is a promising article. Nor are they deficient in minerals. In New York a good deal of iron is found. In New Jersey a very rich copper mine has been opened.

grow knov made what wher has falub the o those healt As New with is no they oats, butte

oper

time

ficie

then

thefe

usefi

three

Nort

The

land,

num

mills

The

WOO

the 1

nd every peaches

timber, nut, the hickory, ts of our York to n extrevines of nt from whether in the grow, from a et proentioned. the timnot fo England uthward pact, and

ut much
at quanarticle.
In New
In New
as been
opened.

nakes it

less ser-

SETTLEMENTS in AMERICA. There is no manner of doubt but in time, when the people come to multiply sufficiently, and experience and want have made them ingenious in opening resources for trade, these colonies will become as remarkable for useful metals as they now are for grain. These: three provinces, as are all those we have in North America, are extremely well watered. They have however observed in New England, that as they clear the country, a vast number of little brooks are quite lost, and the mills upon them by this loss rendered useless. They even observe, that this cutting down the woods has affected the river Connecticut itself, the largest in New England, and that it has grown distinguishably shallower. I do not know whether the same remark has been made in Pensylvania and New York. whatever they have lost in water, which, where there is fuch a plenty, is no great loss, has been amply compensated by the great falubrity of the air, which has arisen from the cultivation of the country. At present those I describe are for the greater part as healthy as can be wished.

As the climate and soil of the provinces of New York, New Jersey, and Pensylvania, are with a very little difference the same, so there is no difference in the commodities in which they trade, which are wheat, slour, barley, oats, Indian corn, peas, beef, pork, cheese, butter, cyder, beer, slax, hemp and slax-seed,

linfeed

linseed oil, furs and deer-skins, staves, lumber, and iron. Their markets are the same with those which the people of New England use; and these colonies have a share in the logwood trade, and that which is carried on with the Spanish and French plantations.

CHAP. IX.

City of New York. Its flourishing trade. Albany. The Indian trade there. The Iroquoisor Six Nations.

HE province of New York has two cities; the first is called by the name of the province itself. It was denominated New Amsterdam when the Dutch possessed it, but it has changed its name along with its masters. This city is most commodiously fituated for trade, upon an excellent harbour, in an island called Manahatton, about fourteen miles long, though not above one or two This island lies just in the mouth of the river Hudson, which discharges itself here after a long course. This is one of the noblest rivers in America. It is navigable upwards of two hundred miles. The tide flows one hundred and fifty.

The city of New York contains upwards of two thousand houses, and above twelve thousand inhabitants, the descendants of Dutch and English.

Engl exten that i the fe fied. Dutcl and v built three therai and in merch neral a mod 1750 been (and e veffels dred a flour, I have 17551 ed to are be the lo table; foreign religio

yields

ness o

is mu

SETTLEMENTS in AMERICA.

English. It is well and commodiously built, extending a mile in length, and about half that in breadth, and has a very good aspect from the sea; but it is by no means properly forti-The houses are built of brick in the Dutch taste; the streets not regular, but clean and well paved. There is one large church built for the church of England worship; and

three others, a Dutch, a French, and a Lutheran. The town has a very flourishing trade, and in which great profits are made.

merchants are wealthy, and the people in general most comfortably provided for, and with a moderate labour. From the year 1749 to 1750 two hundred and thirty-two vessels have

been entered in this port, and two hundred and eighty-fix cleared outwards. In thefe vessels were shipped fix thousand seven hun-

dred and thirty-one tons of provisions, chiefly flour, and a vast quantity of grain; of which

I have no particular account. In the year 1755the export of flax feed to Irelandamount-The inhabitants

ed to 12,528 hogsheads. are between eighty and an hundred thousand; the lower class easy; the better rich, and hospi-

table; great freedom of fociety; and the entry to foreigners made easy by a general toleration of all

religious persuasions. In a word, this province

yields to no part of America in the healthfulness of its air, and the fertility of its soil.

is much superior in the great convenience of

191

ımber, with nd use: gwood

ith the

Iroquois

ias two e name ninated offeffed with its diously arbour, at four-

outh of elf here noblest vards of ne hun-

or two

pwards e thoutch and inglish.

of water carriage, which speedily and at the slightest expense carries the product of the remotest farms to a certain and profitable market.

Upon the river Hudson, about one hundred and fifty miles from New York, is Albany; a town of not so much note for its number of houses or inhabitants, as for the great trade which is carried on with the Indians, and indeed by connivance with the French for the use of the same people. This trade takes off a great quantity of coarse woollen goods, such as strouds and dustils; and with these, guns, hatchets, knives, hoes, kettles, powder and shot; besides shirts and cloaths ready made, and several other articles. Here it is that the treaties and other transactions between us and the Iroquois Indians are negotiated.

This nation, or combination of Five nations, united by an ancient and inviolable league amongst themselves, were the oldest, the most steady, and most effectual ally we have found amongst the Indians. This people, by their unanimity, firmness, military skill, and policy, have raised themselves to be the greatest and most formidable power in all America; they have reduced a vast number of nations, and brought under their power a territory twice as large as the kingdom of France; but they have not increased their subjects in proportion. As their manner of warring is implacable and barbarous,

barb desar figni to liv who And thoug porat foner condi comp men: fifteer demic the vi of fav ple. this d fition in our I hav hopes or wo a capi three fo tha eight

Vo:

much

than o

ofitable undred bany; a nber of at trade and infor the akes off ds, fuch e, guns,

der and

y made,

that the

n us and

at the

of the

nations, e league he most re found by their d policy, atest and

a; they ons, and twice as but they portion. able and rbarous,

barbarous, they reign the lords of a prodigious defart, inhabited only by a few scattered infignificant tribes, whom they have permitted to live out of a contempt of their power, and who are all in the lowest state of subjection. And yet this once mighty and victorious nation, though it has always used the policy of incorporating with itself a great many of the prifoners they make in war, is in a very declining About fixty years ago it was computed, that they had ten thousand fighting men; at this day they cannot raise upwards of fifteen hundred. So much have wars, epidemical diseases, and the unnatural union of the vices of civilized nations with the manners of favages, reduced this once numerous peo-But they are not only much leffened at this day in their numbers, but in their difpofition to employ what numbers they have left in our service. Amongst other neglects, which I have no pleasure in mentioning, and no hopes of feeing amended, this of inattention, or worse treatment of the Indians, is one, and a capital one. The Iroquois have lately had three other nations added to their confederacy, so that they ought now to be considered as and the whole confederacy feems much more inclined to the French interest than ours.

Vol. II. O CHAP,

CHAP. X.

New Jersey. Its trade; and inhabitants.

TEW Jersey, by the perpetual disputes which subsisted between the people and the proprietaries, whilst it continued a proprietary government, was kept for a long time in a very feeble state; but within a few years it has begun to reap some of the advantages which it might have had earlier from the proper management of fo fine a province and so advantageons a fituation. They raise very great quantities of grain at present, and are increased to near fixty thousand souls; but they have yet no town of any consequence. Perth Amboy, which is their capital, has not upwards of two hundred houses; and though this town has a very fine harbour, capable of receiving and securing ships of great burthen, yet as the people of New Jersey have been used to send their produce to the markets of New York and Philadelphia, to which they are contiguous, they find it hard, as it always is in fuch cases, to draw the trade out of the old channel; for there the correspondencies are fixed, the method of dealing established, credits given, and a ready market for needy dealers, who in all countries are fufficiently numerous; so that the trade of this town, which

is the New J 1751, wards, which dred a hundred bread; beef an dred an thoufar hams,

> Account which

Find that check to they fur have be of governay, I great per if there province

ftrious (Will of a mo

nts.

fputes people a prolong a few advanom the e and le very nd are s; but uence. as not though able of arthen, e been kets of h they always the old ies are d, crey deal-

ly nu-

which

13

SETTLEMENTS in AMERICA. 195 is the only town of any trade worth notice in New Jersey, is still inconsiderable; in the year 1751, only forty-one vessels have entered inwards, and only thirty-eight cleared out, in which were exported six thousand four hundred and twenty-sour barrels of flour; one hundred and sixty-eight thousand weight of bread; three hundred and fourteen barrels of beef and pork; seventeen thousand nine hundred and forty-one bushels of grain; sourteen thousand weight of hemp; with some butter, hams, beer, flax-seed, bar-iron, and lumber.

CHAP. XI.

Account of William Pen. The principles on which he settled the colony. His death.

Find it of late a notion pretty current, that proprietary governments are a fort of check to the growth of the colonies which they superintend. It is certain, that abuses have been, and still do subsist in that species of government; and abuses of as bad a kind may, I believe, be found by persons of no great penetration in all our governments; but if there were any truth in this observation, the province of Pensylvania would prove an illustrious exception to it.

William Pen in his capacity of a divine, and of a moral writer, is certainly not of the first

 O_2

rank;

196 An Account of the European rank; and his works are of no great estimation, except amongst his own people; but in his capacity of a legislator, and the founder of fo flourishing a commonwealth, he deserves great honour amongst all mankind; a commonwealth, which in the space of about seventy years, from a beginning of a few hundreds of refugees and indigent men, has grown to be a numerous and flourishing people; a people who from a perfect wilderness have brought their territory to a state of great cultivation, and filled it with wealthy and populous towns; and who in the midst of a fierce and lawless race of men, have preserved themfelves with unarmed hands and paffive principles, by the rules of moderation and justice, better than any other people has done by policy and arms. For Mr. Pen, when for his father's fervices, and by his own interest at court, he obtained the inheritance of this country and its government, faw that he could make the grant of value to him only by making the country as agreeable to all people, as ease and good government could make it. To this purpose he began by purchasing the soil, at a very low rate indeed, from the original possessions, to whom it was of little use. this cheap act of justice at the beginning, he made all his dealings for the future the more easy, by prepossessing the Indians with a favourable opinion of him and his defigns. other

otl thi on eaf lan ch ſpi gai nev folclir felf rag trar and ed i wh priv any dra ren put law both bliss the

fettl

ner,

don

prof

ted;

estimabut in nder of deserves a combout sew hunen, has ng peolderness of great and pof a fierce d theme princijustice, e by pofor his iterest at of this he could by makople, as e it. To the foil, original ise. By ning, he he more

a favou-

s.

The

other

SETTLEMENTS in AMERICA. 197 other part of his plan, which was to people this country, after he had fecured the possession of it, he saw much facilitated by the uneasiness of his brethren the quakers in England, who refufing to pay tythes and other church dues, suffered a great deal from the fpiritual courts. Their high opinion of and regard for the man who was an honour to their new church, made them the more ready to follow him over the vast ocean into an untried climate and country. Neither was he himfelf wanting in any thing which could encourage them. For he expended large fums in transporting and finding them in all necessaries; and not aiming at a fudden profit, he disposed of his land at a very light purchase. But what crowned all, was that noble charter of privileges, by which he made them as free as any people in the world; and which has finee drawn fuch vast numbers of so many different persuasions, and such various countries, to put themselves under the protection of his He made the most perfect freedom, both religious and civil, the basis of this establishment; and this has done more towards the fettling of the province, and towards the fettling of it in a strong and permanent manner, than the wifest regulations could have done upon any other plan. All persons who profess to believe one God, are freely tolerated; those who believe in Jesus Christ, of whatever

198 An Account of the European whatever denomination, are not excluded

from employments and posts.

This great man lived to see an extensive country called after his own name; he lived to see it peopled by his own wisdom, the people free and flourishing, and the most flourishing people in it of his own persuasion; he lived to lay the foundations of a splendid and wealthy city; he lived to see it promise every thing from the situation which he himself had chosen, and the encouragement which he himself had given it; he lived to see all this, but he died in the Fleet prison.

It is but just, that in such a subject we should allot a little room, to do honour to those great men, whose virtue and generosity have contributed to the peopling of the earth, and to the freedom and happiness of mankind; who have preferred the interest of a remote posterity, and times unknown, to their own fortunes, and to the quiet and security of their own lives. Now Great Britain, and all America, reap great benefits from his labours and his losses; and his posterity have a vast estate out of the quit-rents of that province, whose

establishment was the ruin of their prede-

cessor's moderate fortune.

CHAP.

Inba

Pand Swe chur

met the

Ger

giou refer fity here which For relig

hon whe is no riou

prev

ons: and not cluded

tenfive lived n, the flou-

iafion; blendid fromife e himwhich fee all

our to erosity earth, akind; remote own

Amers and estate whose prede-

AP.

CHAP. XII.

Inhabitants of Pensylvania. Variety of nations and religions there. Pacific principles of the quakers. Reflections on the present state of affairs there.

DENSYLVANIA is inhabited by upwards of two hundred and fifty thoufand people, half of whom are Germans. Swedes or Dutch. Here you see the quakers, churchmen, calvinists, lutherans, catholics, methodists, menists, moravians, independents, the anabaptists, and the dumplers, a fort of German fect that live in fomething like a religious fociety, wear long beards, and a habit resembling that of friars; in short, the diverfity of people, religions, nations, and languages here, is prodigious. and the harmony in which they live together, no less edifying. For though every man who wishes well to religion, is forry to fee the diversity which prevails, and would by all humane and honest methods endeavour to prevent it; yet when once the evil has happened, when there is no longer an union of sentiments, it is glorious to preserve at least an union of affections; it is a beautiful prospect, to see men take and give an equal liberty; to fee them live, if not as belonging to the same church, yet to O 4. the 200 An Account of the European

the fame christian religion; and if not to the same religion, yet to the same great fraternitv of mankind. I do not observe, that the quakers who had, and who still have in a great measure, the power in their hands, have made use of it in any fort to persecute; except in the fingle case of George Keith, whom they first imprisoned, and then banished out of the province. This Keith was originally a minister of the church of England, then a quaker, and afterwards returned to his former ministry. But whilst he remained with the friends, he was a most troublesome and litigious man; was for pushing the particularities of quakerism to yet more extravagant lengths, and for making new refinements, even where the most enthusiastic thought they had gone far enough; which rash and turbulent conduct raised such a storm, as shook the church, he then adhered to, to the very foundations.

This little fally into intolerance, as it is a fingle instance, and with great provocation, ought by no means to be imputed to the principles of the quakers, considering the ample and humane latitude they have allowed in all other respects. It was certainly a very right policy to encourage the importation of foreigners into Pensylvania, as well as into our other colonies. By this we are great gainers without any diminution of the inhabitants of

Great

Grd ferv plai and tion prin in the that witH no a one irreg ers way our out color reign inclin ed in thou mans

> the f I transf only ner o and i

thou

it wa

Great Britain. But it has been frequently obferved, and as it should feem, very justly complained of, that they are left still foreigners, and likely to continue fo for many generations; as they have schools taught, books printed, and even the common news paper in their own language; by which means, and that they possess large tracts of the country. without any intermixture of English, there is no appearance of their blending and becoming one people with us. This certainly is a great irregularity, and the greater, as these foreigners by their industry, frugality, and a hard way of living, in which they greatly exceed our people, have in a manner thrust them out in feveral places; fo as to threaten the colony with the danger of being wholly foreign in language, manners, and perhaps even In the year 1750, were importinclinations. ed into Pensylvania and its dependencies four thousand three hundred and seventeen Germans, whereas of British and Irish, but one thousand arrived; a considerable number, if it was not so vastly overballanced by that of the foreigners.

I do by no means think that this fort of transplantations ought to be discouraged; I only observe along with others, that the manner of their fettlement ought to be regulated, and means fought to have them naturalized

in reality.

The

o the terniit the in a have ecute: Ceith. anishs origland, to his

esome partivagant ments, t they

nained

d turshook e very

it is a ation, prinample in all

right of foto our ainers

nts of Great

The present troubles have very unhapily reversed the system so long pursued, and with fuch great success in this part of the world. The Penfylvanians have fuffered feverely by the incursions of the favage Americans as well as their neighbours; but the quakers could not be prevailed upon, by what did not directly affect those of their own communion, (for they were out of the way of mischief in the more fettled parts,) to relinquish their pacific principles; for which reason a considerable opposition, in which, however, we must do the quakers the justice to observe they were not unanimous, was made both within their affembly, as well as without doors, against granting any money to carry on the war; and the fame, or a more vigorous oppofition, was made against passing a militia bill. A bill of this kind has at length passed, but scarcely such as the circumstances of the country, and the exigencies of the times re-It may perhaps appear an error, to have placed so great part of the government in the hands of men, who hold principles directly opposite to its end and design. peaceable, industrious, honest people, the quakers cannot be too much cherished; but surely they cannot themselves complain, that when by their opinions they make themselves sheep, they should not be entrusted with the office, fince they have not the nature of dogs.

CHAP.

Desc be in

ceed that by, 1 whol tong of tw kil. figne but t an ha and n is bro origin comp in len teen **fpacid** for th ket-pl

acres,

ings :

of th

CHAP. XIII.

Description of Philadelphia. Its trade. Number of people in Pensylvania. Its flourishing condition. Few negroes there.

THERE are so many good towns in the province of Pensylvania, even exceeding the capitals of some other provinces. that nothing could excuse our passing them by, had not Philadelphia drawn our attention wholly to itself. This city stands upon a tongue of land, immediately at the confluence of two fine rivers, the Delawar and the Schulkil. It is disposed in the form of an oblong, defigned to extend two miles from river to river: but the buildings do not extend above a mile and an half on the West side of Delawar in length, and not more than half a mile where the town is broadest. The longest stretch when the original plan can be fully executed, is to compose eight parallel streets, all of two miles in length; these are to be intersected by fixteen others, each in length a mile, broad, spacious, and even; with proper spaces left for the public buildings, churches, and market-places. In the center is a square of ten acres, round which most of the public buildings are disposed. The two principal streets of the city are each one hundred feet wide, and

ely by s well could ot diunion, ischief their

e must

ly re-

with vorld.

e they within doors, on the coppotia bill. ed, but of the mes re-

rnment
ples diAs a
he quait fureit when

ror, to

s sheep, e office,

IAP.

An ACCOUNT of the EUROPEAN and most of the houses have a small garden and orchard; from the rivers are cut feveral canals, equally agreeable and beneficial. kays are spacious and fine; the principal kay is two hundred feet wide, and to this a vessel of five hundred tons may lay her broadfide. The warehouses are large, numerous and commodious, and the docks for ship-building every way well adapted to their purposes. A great number of vessels have been built here; twenty have been upon the stocks at a time. This city contains, exclusive of warehouses and outhouses, about two thousand houses; most of them of brick, and well built; it is faid there are feveral of them worth four or five thousand pounds. The inhabitants are now about thirteen thousand.

There are in this city a great number of very wealthy merchants; which is no way furprifing, when one confiders the great trade which it carries on with the English, French, Spanish and Dutch colonies in America; with the Azores, the Canaries, and the Madeira islands; with Great Britain and Ireland; with Spain, Portugal and Holland, and the great profits which are made in many branches of this commerce. Besides the quantity of all kinds of the produce of this province which is brought down the rivers Delawar and Schulkil (the former of which is navigable for vessels of one fort or other more

model nin hor to dre por ed of the

not ma orig cari the day city tish In f thei othe tho cam four In f ly f that of th a th ry l

SETTLEMENTS in AMERICA. 205 more than two hundred miles above Philadelphia,) the Dutch employ between eight and nine thousand waggons, drawn each by four horses, in bringing the product of their farms to this market. In the year 1749, three hundred and three vessels entered inwards at this port, and two hundred and ninety-one cleared outwards. There are at the other ports of this province custom-house officers, but the foreign trade in these places is not worth notice.

The city of Philadelphia, though, as it may be judged, far from compleating the original plan; yet so far as it is built, it is carried on conformable to it, and increases in the number and beauty of its buildings every And as for the province, of which this city is the capital, there is no part of British America in a more growing condition. In some years more people have transported themselves into Pensylvania, than into all the other fettlemenrs together. In 1729, fix thousand two hundred and eight persons came to fettle here as passengers or servants, four fifths of whom at least were from Ireland. In short, this province has increased so greatly from the time of its first establishment, that lands were given by Mr. Pen the founder of the colony at the rate of twenty pounds for a thousand acres, referving only a shilling every hundred acres for quit-rent; and this in fome

garden several

The pal kay a vessel oadside.

id comig every A great here;

a time. ehouses houses;

noules;
lt; it is
four or
ants are

nber of no way at trade French, merica; the Ma-Ireland; and the branch-

quanhis proers Dewhich or other

more

fome of the best situated parts of the province; but now at a great distance from navigation, land is granted at twelve pounds the hundred acres, and a quit-rent of four shillings reserved; and the land which is near Philadelphia, rents for twenty shillings the acre. In many places, and at the distance of several miles from that city, land sells for twenty years

purchase.

The Pensylvanians are an industrious and hardy people; they are most of them substantial, though but a few of the landed people can be considered as rich; but they are all well lodged, well fed, and, for their condition, well clad too; and this at the more easy rate, as the inferior people manusacture most of their own wear both linens and woollens, There are but few blacks, not in all the fortieth part of the people of the pro-

vince.

CHAP. XIV.

Situation, &c. of Virginia. Conveniency of its rivers for navigation. Beasts and birds of the country. The opossum.

HE whole country which the English now possess in North America, was at first called Virginia; but by parcelling of several portions of it into distinct grants and governments,

gov the has the Can war but grea leav fort

deg tren are o vou maf rica kno whi you if th strar able land of la oper one the

thre

Nor

SETTLEMENTS in AMERICA.

governments, the country which still bears the name, is now reduced to that tract which has the river Potowmack upon the North; the bay of Chesapeak upon the East; and Carolina upon the South. To the Westward the grants extend it to the South-Sea; but their planting goes no farther than the great Allegany mountains, which boundaries leave this province in length two hundred and forty miles, and in breadth about two hundred, lying between the fifty-fifth and fortieth

degrees of North latitude.

The whole face of this country is fo extremely low towards the fea, that when you are come even within fifteen fathom foundings you can hardly diffinguish land from the mast head. However, all this coast of America has one useful particularity, that you know your distance exactly by the foundings, which uniformly and gradually diminish as you approach the land. The trees appear as if they rose out of the water, and afford the stranger a very uncommon, and not a disagreeable view. In failing to Virginia or Maryland, you pass a streight between two points of land, called the Capes of Virginia, which opens a passage into the bay of Chesapeak, one of the largest and safest bays perhaps in the world; for it enters the country near three hundred miles from the South to the North, having the Eastern side of Maryland,

English , was at ling of nts and

cy of its birds of

vince:

gation,

undred

ferved:

a, rents

many

1 miles

y years

ous and

n fub-

d peo-

y are all

ndition.

re easy

e most

oollens.

all the

e pro-

hments,

and a small portion of Virginia on the same peninsula, to cover it from the Atlantic ocean. This bay is about eighteen miles broad for a considerable way, and seven where it is narrowest, the waters in most places being nine fathom deep. Through its whole extent it

receives both on the Eastern and Western side a vast number of fine navigable rivers. Not to mention those of Maryland, from the side of Virginia it receives James River, York River, the Rappahannock, and the Potow

mack.

All these great rivers, in the order they are here fet down from South to North, discharge themselves with several smaller ones into the bay of Chesapeak; and they are all not only navigable themselves for very large vessels a prodigious way into the country, but have fo many creeks, and receive such a number of fmaller navigable rivers, as renders the communication of all parts of this country infinitely more easy than that of any country, without exception, in the world. The Potowmack is navigable for near two hundred miles, being nine miles broad as its mouth, and for The other a vast way not less than seven. three are navigable upwards of eighty, and in the windings of their feveral courses approach one another so nearly, that the distance between one and the other is in some parts not more than ten, fometimes not above five miles:

fpa pla bur con pro circ fend fell dut tion all t

ly g ing and wing ing.

est these viole frequency but

the pene

V

SETTLEMENTS in AMERICA. 209 miles; whereas in others there is fifty miles space between each of these rivers. The planters load and unload vessels of great burthen each at his own door; which, as their commodities are bulky, and of small value in proportion to their bulk, is a very fortunate circumstance, else they could never afford to send their tobacco to market low as they they fell it, and charged as it is in England, with a duty of fix times its original value.

The climate and foil of Virginia was undoubtedly much heightened in the first descriptions for political reasons; but after making all the necessary abatements which experience fince taught us, we still find it a most excellent country. The heats in furnmer are excessively great, but not without the allay of refreshing sea breezes. The weather is changeable, and the changes fudden and violent. winter frosts come on without the least warning. After a warm day, towards the fetting in of winter, so intense a cold often succeeds as to freeze over the broadest and deepest of their great rivers in one nihgt; but these frosts, as well as their rains, are rather violent than of long continuance. They have frequent and violent thunder and lightning, but it does rarely any mischief. In general the sky is clear, and the air thin, pure and penetrating.

The foil in the low grounds of Virginia is Vol. II. P a dark

fame ocean.

is narg nine
ctent it

Not he side York

Potow

hey are scharge nto the ot only effels a have so mber of

e comtry incountry, Potowd miles, and for

e other and in pproach

nce bearts not ve five

miles;

a dark fat mould, which for many years without any manure, yields plentifully whatever is committed to it. The foil as you leave the rivers becomes light and fandy, is fooner exhausted than the low country, but is yet of a warm and generous nature, which helped by a kindly sun, yields tobacco and corn extremely well. There is no better wheat than what is produced in this province and Maryland; but the culture of tobacco employs all their attention, and almost all their hands; so that

they scarcely cultivate wheat enough for

their own use.

It may be judged from the climate and the foil I have described, in what excellence and plenty every sort of fruit is found in Virginia. Their forests are full of timber trees of all kinds; and their plains are covered for almost the whole year with a prodigious number of slowers, and slowering shrubs, of colours so rich, and of a scent so fragrant, that they occasioned the name of Florida to be originally given to this country. This country produces several medicinal herbs and roots, particularly the snake root; and of late the celebrated ginfeng of the Chinese has been discovered there.

Horned cattle and hogs have multiplied almost beyond belief; though at the first settlement the country was utterly destitute of these animals. The meat of the former is as much below the slesh of our oxen, as that of

the mal ther tyge wild calle fize in c bene end bag, mon whe the · like bulk they belly and dang

fowl have kind. The the f a bri black night

beaut

blue

the

21T

the latter exceeds that of our hogs. The animals natural to the country are deer, of which there are great numbers; a fort of panther or tyger; bears, wolves, foxes, racoons, squirrels, wild cats, and one very uncommon animal called the opoffum. This creature is about the fize of a cat, and besides the belly which it has in common with all others, has a false one beneath it, with a pretty large aperture at the end towards the hinder legs. Within this bag, or belly on the usual parts of the common belly, are a number of teats; upon these, when the female of this creature conceives, the young are formed, and there they hang like fruit upon the stalk, until they grow in bulk and weight to their appointed fize; then they drop off, and are received in the false belly, from which they go out at pleasure, and in which they take refuge when any danger threatens them.

They have all our forts of tame and wild fowl in equal perfection, and some which we have not; and a vast number of birds of various kinds, valuable for their beauty or their note. The white owl of Virginia is far larger than the fpecies which we have, and is all over of a bright filver coloured plumage, except one black spot upon his breast; they have the nightingale called from the country, a most beautiful one, whose feathers are crimson and blue; the mocking bird, thought to excel

 P_2

roduces cularly ed ginll there. lied alt settletute of

with-

ver is

e the

er ex-

t of a

d by a

emely

vhat is

vland:

l their

so that

h for

nd the

ce and

irginia.

of all

almost

nber of

ours fo

hey oc-

ginally

her is as that of

the

all others in his own note, and he imitates the notes of all others; the rock bird, very fociable, and his fociety very agreeable by the fweetness of his music; the humming bird, the smallest of all the winged creation, and the most beautiful, all arrayed in scarlet, green and gold. This bird is faid to live by licking off the dew that adheres to the flowers; he is too delicate to be brought alive into England. The fea-coasts and rivers of Virginia abound not only in feveral of the species of fish known in Europe, but in most of those kinds which are peculiar to America. The reptiles are many; it were tedious to enumerate all the kinds of serpents bred here; the rattle fnake is the principal, and too well known in general to need any description.

CHAP. XV. *

Towns in Virginia few and small. Tobacco, its cultivation. Trade in that and other commodities. People in Virginia. White and black.

THE great commodiousness of navigation, and the scarcity of handicrastsmen, have rendered all the attempts of the government to establish towns in Virginia inessectual. James's town, which was anciently the capital, is dwindled into an insignificant

the the just series and the series and bly pub

as w abor ufe, nor t the just man my; green plant are i transf grou hop

tranfi

form

imitates
rd, very
re by the
ng bird,
on, and
rt, green
r licking
rs; he is
England.
abound
of fish
ofe kinds
The repnumerate
the rattle

bacco, its r commobite and

nown in

navigandicraftss of the
Virginia
was ancian infignificant

nificant village; and Williamsburg, though the capital at present, the seat of the governor, the place of holding the assembly and courts of justice, and a college for the study of arts and sciences, is yet but a small town. However, in this town are the best public buildings in British America. The college one hundred and thirty-sive feet long in front, resembling Chelsea hospital; the capital directly facing it at the other end of the design of a noble street, not unlike the college in the tashion and the size of the building, where the assembly and courts of justice are held, and the public offices kept; and the church, in the form of a cross, large and well ornamented.

The great staple commodity of this country, as well as Maryland, is tobacco. This plant is aboriginal in America, and of very ancient use, though neither so generally cultivated, nor so well manufactured as it has been since the coming of the Europeans. When at its just height, it is as tall as an ordinary fized man; the stalk is straight, hairy, and clammy; the leaves alternate, of a faded vellowish green, and towards the lower part of the The feeds of tobacco plant of a great fize. are first sown in beds, from whence they are transplanted the first rainy weather, into a ground disposed into little hillocks like an hop garden. In a month's time from their transplantation they become a foot high; they

P 3

then

then top them, and prune off the lower leaves, and with great attention clean them from weeds and worms twice a week; in about fix weeks after, they attain to their full growth, and they begin then to turn brownith. By these marks they judge the tobacco to be ripe. They cut down the plants as fast as they ripen, heap them up, and let them lie a night to fweat; the next day they carry them to the tobacco house, which is built to admit as much air as is confistent with keeping out rain, where they are hung feparately to dry for four or five weeks, then they take them down in moist weather, for else they will crumble to dust. After this they are laid upon sticks, and covered up close to sweat for a week or two longer; the servants strip and fort them, the top being the best, the bottom the worst tobacco; then they make them up in hogsheads, or form them into rolls. feasons must be carefully laid hold on for all this work, else the tobacco will not be sufficiently pliable.

In trade they distinguish two sorts of tobacco, the first is called Aranokoe, from Maryland and the Northern parts of Virginia; this is strong and hot in the mouth, but it sells very well in the markets of Holland, Germany, and the North. The other sort is called sweet scented, the best of which is from James's and York rivers in the South-

ern

ern

dit

as

app

up

in i

dov

and

the

gin

ma

lan

the

adv

Th

con

dur

to t

fore

bri

in l

wh

can

eve

trac

nea

one

the

cor

as g

fay

lower them ek; in eir full wnith. to be fast as n lie a them admit ing out to dry e them ey will re laid reat for rip and bottom em up Wet for all e fuffif tobac-Maryirginia; , but it Iolland, fort is hich is

South-

ern

ern parts of Virginia. There is no commodity to which the revenue is so much obliged It produces a vast sum, and yet as to this. appears to lay but a very inconsiderable burthen upon the people in England; all the weight in reality falls upon the planter, who is kept down by the lowness of the original price; and as we have two provinces which deal in the same commodity, if the people of Virginia were to take measures to straiten the market, and raise the price, those of Maryland would certainly take the advantage of it; the people of Virginia would take the same advantage of those of Maryland in a like case. They have no prospect of ever bettering their condition; and they are the less able to endure it as they live in general luxuriously, and to the full extent of their fortunes. fore any failure in the fale of their goods, brings them heavily in debt to the merchants in London, who get mortgr ges on their estates, which are confumed to the bone, with the canker of an eight per cent usury. But however the planters may complain of the tobacco trade, the revenue flourishes by it, for it draws near three hundred thousand a year from this one article only; and the exported tobacco, the far greater part of the profits of which come to the English merchant, brings almost as great a fum annually into the kingdom. To fay nothing of the great advantage we derive from

from being supplied from our own colonies with that for which the rest of Europe pays ready money, besides the employment of two hundred large vessels, and a proportionable number of seamen, which are occupied in this trade. From us the Virginians take every article for convenience or ornament which they use; their own manufacture does not deferve to be mentioned. The two colonies export about eighty thousand hogsheads of tobacco of eight hundred weight. They likewife trade largely with the West-Indies in lumber, pitch, tar, corn, and provisions. They fend home flax, hemp, iron, staves, and walnut and cedar plank.

The number of white people in Virginia, is between fixty and feventy thousand; and they are growing every day more numerous, by the migration of the Irish, who not succeeding so well in Pensylvania, as the more frugal and industrious Germans, sell their lands in that province to the latter, and take up new ground in the remote counties in Virginia, Maryland, and North Carolina. are chiefly presbyterians from the Northern part of Ireland, who in America are generally called Scotch Irish. In Virginia there are likewise settled a considerable number of French refugees; but much the larger part of the inhabitants are the negroe flaves, who cannot be much fewer than a hundred thou-

fand

thor that moo heal are tation the clatel have

Atte

rians

the made Caro Sir genina pe

cour! foldie lonies
pays
f two
pnable
led in
every
which
lot deplonies
ads of
y likedies in
They
d wal-

rginia, 1; and ous, by cceedfrugal nds in ke up n Vir-Thefe rthern neralere are ber of part of who thoufand

SETTLEMENTS in AMERICA. fand fouls; they annually import into the two tobacco colonies between three and four thousand of these slaves. The negroes heredo not stand in need of such vast recruits as the West-India stock; they rather increase than diminish; a bleffing derived from a more moderate labour, better food, and a more healthy climate. The inhabitants of Virginia are a chearful, hospitable, and many of them a genteel though fomething vain and oftentatious people; they are for the greater part of the established church of England; nor until lately did they tolerate any other. Now they have some few meeting-houses of presbyterians and quakers.

CHAP. XVI.

Attempts to settle Virginia, three unsuccessful.

Settled at last by lord Delawar.

THIS of Virginia is the most ancient of our colonies. Tho' strictly speaking the first attempts to settle a colony were not made in Virginia, but in that part of North Carolina which immediately borders upon it. Sir Walter Raleigh, the most extraordinary genius of his own or perhaps any other time, a penetrating statesman, an accomplished courtier, a deep scholar, a fine writer, a great soldier, and one of the ablest scame in the world;

An ACCOUNT of the EUROPEAN world; this vast genius that pierced so far and ran through fo many things, was of a fiery excentric kind, which led him into daring expeditions, and uncommon projects. which not being understood by a timid prince, and envied and hated by the rivals he had in fo many ways of life, ruined him at last. In person he ran infinite risques in Guaina in fearch of gold mines; and when this country was first discovered, he looked through the work of an age, at one glance, and faw how advantageous it might be made to the trade of England. He was the first man in England who had a right conception of the advantages of settlements abroad; he was then the only person who had a thorough infight into trade, and who faw clearly the proper methods of promoting it. He applied to court, and got together a company, which was composed of several persons of distinction, and feveral eminent merchants, who agreed to open a trade and fettle a colony in that part of the world, which in honour of queen Elizabeth he called Virginia.

Raleigh had too much business upon his hands at court, and found too few to second him in his designs, to enable him to support the establishment with the spirit in which he began it. If ever any design had an ominous beginning, and seemed to forbid any attempts for carrying it on, it was that of the first settle-

ment

me lon reff fan hor off, the Ind fate felv for info of 1 rem con of (witl

real frow as a purplife, upon accentitis cottry;

retir

ever

SETTLEMENTS in AMERICA.

ment c? Virginia. Near half of the first colony was destroyed by the savages, and the rest consumed and worn down by fatigue and famine, deferted the country, and returned home in despair. The second colony was cut off, to a man, in a manner unknown; but they were supposed to be destroyed by the Indians. The third had the same dismal fate; and the fourth quarrelling amongst themfelves, neglecting their agriculture to hunt for gold, and provoking the Indians by their infolent and unguarded behaviour, lost feveral of their people, and were returning, the poor remains of them, in a famishing and desperate condition to England, when just in the mouth of Chesapeak bay they met the lord Delawar with a fquadron, loaded with provision, and every thing for their relief and defence, who persuaded them to return.

This nobleman travelled with as much zeal and affiduity to cherish and support the froward infancy of this unpromising colony, as some have used in its better times for purposes of another kind. Regardless of his life, and inattentive to his fortune, he entered upon this long and dangerous voyage, and accepted this barren province, which had nothing of a government but its anxieties and its cares, merely for the service of his country; and he had no other reward than that retired and inward satisfaction, which a good

mind

hrough and faw to the man in of the was

country

applied, which tinction, agreed

arly the

hat part een Eli-

pon his o fecond fupport which he ominous attempts of fettle-

ment

mind feels in indulging its own propensity to virtue, and the prospect of those just honours which the latest posterity will take a pleasure in bestowing upon those, who prefer the interest of posterity to their own. After he had prevailed upon the people to return, he comforted them under their missortunes, he pointed out their causes, and uniting the tenderness of a father with the steady severity of a magistrate, he healed their divisions, and reconciled them to authority and government, by making them feel by his conduct what a blessing it could be made.

When he had fettled the colony within itfelf, his next care was to put them upon a proper footing with regard to the Indians, whom he found very haughty and affuming on account of the late miserable state of the English; but by some well-timed and vigorous steps he humbled them, shewed he had power to chastife them, and courage to exert that power; and after having awed them into very peaceable dispositions, and settled his colony in a very growing condition, he retired home for the benefit of his health, which by his constant attention to business, and the air of an uncultivated country, had been impaired; but he left his son, with the spirit of his father, his deputy; and Sir Thomas Gates, Sir George Summers, the honourable George Piercy, Sir Ferdinand Wenman, and Mr.

Newport,

per thi col you to nai per

his felf his mo fup was

the

he

his

peo

thi

fure defi wh and pale cult

ing wh onours
afure in
interest
ad premfortpointed
derness
y of a
s, and

overn-

thin itupon a ndians, fuming of the l vigohe had o exert m into ed his retired

ne air of paired; his faces, Sir George d Mr. wport,

hich by

Newport, for his council. There, with other persons of rank and fortune, attended him on this expedition, which gave a credit to the colony. Though there are in England many young gentlemen of fortunes, disproportioned to their rank, I sear we should not see the names of so many of them engaged in an expedition, which had no better appearance than this had at that time.

Lord Delawar did not forget the colony on his return to England; but confidering himfelf as nearer the fountain head, thought it his duty to turn the spring of the royal favour more copiously upon the province which he superintended. For eight years together he was indefatigable in doing every thing that could tend to the peopling, the support, and the good government of this settlement, and he died in the pursuit of the same object in his voyage to Virginia, with a large supply of people, cloathing and goods.

It is one of the most necessary, and I am sure it is one of the most pleasing parts of this design, to do justice to the names of those men, who by their greatness of mind, their wisdom and their goodness, have brought into the pale of civility and religion, these rude and uncultivated parts of the globe; who could discern the rudiments of a future people, wanting only time to be unfolded, in the seed; who could perceive amidst the losses and dis-

appointments

appointments and expences of a beginning colony, the great advantages to be derived to their country from fuch undertakings; and who could purfue them in spite of the malignity and narrow wifdom of the world. ancient world had its Ofyris and Erichthonius, who taught them the use of grain; their Bacchus, who instructed them in the culture of the vine; and their Orpheus and Linus, who first built towns and formed civil societies. The people of America will not fail, when time has made things venerable, and when an intermixture of fable has moulded useful truths into popular opinions, to mention with equal gratitude, and perhaps fimilar heightening circumstances, her Columbus, her Castro, her Gasca, her De Poincy, her Delawar, her Baltimore, and her Pen.

CHAP. XVII.

Virginia holds out against Cromwell, and is reduced. Bacon's rebellion. Its causes. Bacon dies. Peace restored.

THE colony of Virginia was so fast rooted by the care of lord Delawar, that it was enabled to stand two terrible storms; two massacres made by the Indians, in which the whole colony was nearly cut off; and to subdue that people, so as to put

it ut past

patt
In
the f
flitus
fled
gene
virtu
the
ftrata
what
upon
well'
ley
the
news
rica.

interes after, from from bitant clude these mong broug young He v

bred

it utterly out of their power for many years past to give them the least disturbance.

In the fatal troubles which brought Charles the first to the block, and overturned the constitution of England, many of the cavaliers sled for refuge to this colony, which by the general disposition of the inhabitants, and the virtue of Sir William Berkley, held out for the crown, until the parliament, rather by stratagem than force, reduced them. And what is remarkable, if it may be depended upon with any certainty, they deposed Cromwell's governor, set up Sir William Berkley again, and declared for king Charles the second, a good while even before the news of Oliver's death could arrive in America.

After the restoration, there is nothing very interesting in their history; except that soon after, a fort of rebellion arose in the province from mismanagements in the government, from the decay of their trade, and from exorbitant grants inconsiderately made, which included the settled property of many people; these grievances raised a general discontent amongst the planters, which was somented and brought to blaze out into an actual war, by a young gentleman whose name was Bacon. He was an agreeable man, of a graceful presence, and winning carriage. He had been bred to the law, had a lively and fluent expression,

d is re-Bacon

ig co-

ed to

; and

nalig-

The

onius.

their

ulture

s, who

cieties.

when

when

useful

n with

ghten-

Castro,

ar, her

fo faft elawar, terrible ndians, ly cut to put

it

pression, sit to set off a popular cause, and to influence men who were ready to hear whatever could be faid to colour in a proper manner what was already strongly drawn by their own feelings. This man by a specious, or perhaps a real tho' ill-judged regard for the public good, finding the governor flow in his preparations against the Indians, who were at that time ravaging the frontiers of the province, took up arms without any commission, to act against the enemy. When he had fufficient force for this purpose, he found himfelf in a condition not only to act against the enemy, but to give law to the governor, and to force him to give a fanction by his authority, to those proceedings which were meant to destroy it.

Bacon armed with the commission of a general, and followed by the whole force of the colony, prepared to march against the Indians; when Sir William Berkley, the governor, freed from the immediate terror of his forces, recalled him, proclaimed him a traitor, and issued a reward for apprehending him as such. This brought matters to extremities; the people were universally inflamed; Bacon adhered to what he had done, the people adhered to Bacon; and the governor, who seemed no ways inclined to temporize or yield to the storm, sled over the river Potowmack, and proclaimed all Bacon's adherents traitors. He

tro of hir the cal the ple ac a in of I \mathbf{Th} pof wei kep by t of, lanc cou the perf rebe as r in f

pu

the ing to e ther the

put

and to whatmanner eir own perhaps e public is prewere at he promission, he had nd himinst the ior, and authoe meant

of a gee of the
Indians;
overnor,
s forces,
itor, and
as fuch.
ies; the
con adle adheb feemed
d to the
ack, and
tors. He

put

put himself at the head of a small body of troops which he had raifed in Maryland, and of fuch of the Virginians as were faithful to him, and wrote to England for supplies. the other hand, Bacon marched to the capital, called an affembly, and for fix months together disposed all things according to his own pleasure. Every thing was now hastening to a civil war, when all was quieted in as fudden a manner as it had begun, by the natural death of Bacon, in the very height of the confusion. The people unable to act without a head, proposed terms of accommodation; the terms were listened to, and peace was restored and kept without any disturbance, not so much by the removal of the grievances complained of, as by the arrival of a regiment from England, which remained a long time in the It must be remarked in honour of the moderation of the government, that no person suffered in his life, or his estate, for this rebellion, which was the more extraordinary, as many people at that time were very earnest in folliciting grants of land in Virginia.

The events in all countries which are not the residence of the supreme power, and have no concern in the great business of transacting war and peace, have generally but little to engage the attention of the reader. I have therefore intirely omitted the tedious detail of the governors and their several transactions,

Vol. II. Q with

with which my materials fo plentifully supply me; and for the same reason I shall be very concise in my account of Maryland, which agreeing altogether with Virginia in its climate, soil, products, trade, and genius of the inhabitants, and having sew or no remarkable events to recommend it, will save much trouble in that article.

CHAP. XVIII.

Maryland. The time of settling it. Grant to lord Baltimore. Attempts of king James to deprive him of his jurisdiction. He is deprived of it on the revolution. He is restored. Capital of Maryland. Its trade and inhabitants.

T was in the reign of Charles the first, that the Lord Baltimore applied for a patent for a part of Virginia, and obtained in 1632, a grant of a tract of land upon Chesapeak bay, of about an hundred and forty miles long, and an hundred and thirty broad, having Pensylvania, then in the hands of the Dutch, upon the North, the Atlantic ocean upon the East, and the river Potowmack upon the South; in honour of the queen he called this province Maryland.

Lord Baltimore was a Roman catholic, and was induced to attempt this settlement in

tic ocean the far nack up-queen he Baltin willing catholic, ement in America,

Am fcie to v thei pref the they the The little a ha the ! the l tutio cline do it party the e

to: pc

lar, t

v, th

they

with

them

thofe

upply very which its cliof the markmuch

rant to ames to s depriestored. d inha-

e first, for a ined in Chesay miles d, havof the cocean ack upueen he

atholic, nent in merica

America, in hopes of enjoying liberty of confcience for himself, and for such of his sriends to whom the severity of the laws might loosen their ties to their country, and make them prefer an easy banishment with freedom, to the conveniencies of England, embittered as they were by the sharpness of the laws, and the popular odium which hung over them. The court at that time was certainly very little inclined to treat the Roman catholics in a harsh manner, neither had they in reality the least appearance of reason to do so; but the laws themselves were of a rigorous constitution; and however the court might be inclined to relax them, they could not in policy do it, but with great reserve. The puritan party perpetually accused the court, and indeed the episcopal church, of a desire of returning to popery; and this accusation was so popular, that it was not in the power of the court v, shew the papists that indulgence which they defired. The laws were still executed with very little mitigation; and they were in themselves of a much keener temper, than those which had driven the puritans about the same time to feek a refuge in the same part of the world. These reasons made lord Baltimore defirous to have, and the court willing to give him, a place of retreat in America.

The

228 An Account of the European

The fettlement of the colony cost the lord Baltimore a large fum. It was made under his auspices by his brother, and about two hundred persons, Roman catholics, and most of them of good families. This fettlement at the beginning did not meet with the fame difficulties, which embarraffed and retarded most of the others we had made. The people were generally of the better fort, a proper fubordination was observed amongst them, and the Indians gave and took so little offence, that they ceded one half of their principal town, and some time after the whole of it to these strangers. The Indian women taught ours how to make bread of their corn; their men went out to hunt and fish with the English; they affished them in the chace, and fold them the game they took themselves for a trifling confideration; fo that the new fettlers had a fort of town ready built, ground ready cleared for their subfistence, and no enemy to harrass them.

They lived thus, without much trouble or fear, until some ill-disposed persons in Virginia infinuated to the Indians, that the Baltimore colony had designs upon them; that they were Spaniards and not Englishmen, and such other stories as they judged proper to sow the seeds of suspicion and enmity in the minds of these people. Upon the first appearance,

ap ha no goo oth but wit

def

auc cou rive lord no (the hon Mai poir unti was he d and grea will joy min affer his d

ed to

e lord

under

t two

most

ent at

ne dif-

flom f

people

proper

them,

ffence,

incipal

of it

taught

; their

e Eng-

nd fold

for a

fettlers

l ready

enemy

uble or

Virgi-

Balti-

h; that

shmen,

proper

mity in

he first

earance,

appearance, that the malice of the Virginians had taken effect, the new planters were not wanting to themselves. They built a good fort with all expedition, and took every other necessary measure for their desence; but they continued still to treat the Indians with so much kindness, that partly by that and partly by the awe of their arms, the ill designs of their enemies were deseated.

As the colony met with fo few obstructions, aud as the Roman catholics in England were yet more feverely treated in proportion as the court party declined, numbers constantly arrived to replenish the settlement; which the lord proprietor omitted no care, and witheld no expence to support and encourage; until the usurpation overturned the government at home, and deprived him of his rights abroad. Maryland remained under the governors appointed by the parliament and by Cromwell until the restoration, when lord Baltimore was reinstated in his former possessions, which he cultivated with his former wisdom, care and moderation. No people could live in greater ease and security; and his lordship, willing that as many as possible should enjoy the benefits of his mild and equitable administration, gave his consent to an act of affembly, which he had before promoted in his province, for allowing a free and unlimited toleration for all who professed the christi-

 Q_3

230 An Account of the European an religion of whatever denomination. liberty, which was never in the least instance violated, encouraged a great number, not only of the church of England, but of presbyterians, quakers, and all kinds of diffenters, to fettle in Maryland, which before that was almost wholly in the hands of Roman catholics.

This lord, though guilty of no maleadministration in his government, though a zealous Roman catholic, and firmly attached to the cause of king James the second, could not prevent his charter from being questioned in that arbitrary reign, and a fuit from being commenced to deprive him of the property and jurisdiction of a province granted by the royal favour, and peopled at such a vast expence of his own. But it was the error of that weak and unfortunate reign, neither to know its friends, nor its enemies; but by a blind precipitate conduct to hurry on every thing of whatever consequence with almost equal heat, and to imagine that the found of the royal authority was sufficient to justify every fort of conduct to every fort of people. But these injuries could not shake the honour and constancy of lord Baltimore, nor tempt him to defert the cause of his master. the revolution he had no reason to expect any favour; yet he met with more than king James had intended him; he was deprived indeed of all his jurisdiction, but he was left

the me den lan full pro

han but ind adn Rot mei hav pen at t fpir the mo mei to that litic ligi pro priv the our whi fort

the

reig

the profits of his province, which were by no means inconfiderable; and when his descendents had conformed to the church of England, they were restored to all their rights as fully as the legislature has thought fit that any

proprietor should enjoy them.

This

stance

t only

erians,

ttle in

ılmost

lmini-

ealous

to the

ld not

ned in

being

operty

by the

ast ex-

ror of

her to

out by

every

almost

und of

justify

eople.

nonour

tempt

Upon

ct any

king

prived

vas left

the

When upon the revolution power changed hands in that province, the new men made but an indifferent requital for the liberties and indulgences they had enjoyed under the old administration. They not only deprived the Roman catholics of all share in the government, but of all the rights of freemen; they have even adopted the whole body of the penal laws of England against them; they are at this day meditating new laws in the fame fpirit, and they would undoubtedly go to the greatest lengths in this respect, if the moderation and good sense of the government in England did not fet some bounds to their bigotry; thinking very prudently that it were highly unjust, and equally impolitic, to allow an afylum abroad to any religious persuasions which they judged it improper to tolerate at home, and then to deprive them of its protection, recollecting at the same time in the various changes which our religion and government has undergone, which have in their turns rendered every fort of party and religion obnoxious to the reigning powers, that this American afylum which

An ACCOUNT of the EUROPEAN 232 which has been admitted in the hottest times of perfecution at home, has proved of infinite fervice, not only to the present peace of England, but to the prosperity of its commerce, and the establishment of its There are a fort of men, who will power. not fee so plain a truth; and they are the persons who would appear to contend most warmly for liberty; but it is only a party liberty for which they contend; a liberty, which they would stretch out one way only to narrow it in another; they are not ashamed of using the very same pretences for perfecuting others, that their enemies use for persecuting them.

This colony, as for a long time it had with Penfylvania the honour of being unstained with any religious persecution, so neither they nor the Penfylvanians have ever until very lately been harraffed by the calamity of any war, offensive or defensive, with their Indian neighbours, with whom they always lived in the most exemplary harmony. Indeed, in a war which the Indians made upon the colony of Virginia, by mistake they made an incursion into the bounds of Maryland; but they were foon fensible of their mistake, and attoned for it. This present war indeed has changed every thing, and the Indians have been taught to laugh at all their ancient alliances.

Maryland,

able nun nap fma the

prin ple relig chu prov and the from respectoba

Atte

fand

fand

the rely fo was

SETTLEMENTS in AMERICA. 233

Maryland, like Virginia, has no confiderable town, and for the same reason; the number of navigable creeks and rivers. Annapolis is the seat of government. It is a small but beautifully situated town upon the river Severn.

Here is the seat of the governor, and the principal custom-house collection. The people of Maryland have the same established religion with those of Virginia, that of the church of England; but here the clergy are provided for in a much more liberal manner, and they are the most decent, and the best of the clergy in North America. They export from Maryland the same things in all respects that they do from Virginia. Their tobacco is about forty thousand hogsheads. The white inhabitants are about forty thousand; the negroes upwards of sixty thousand.

CHAP. XIX.

Attempts of the French to settle Carolina. They are beat off by the Spaniards.

T must not be forgot, that we formerly called all the coast of North America by the name of Virginia. The province properly so called, with Maryland and the Carolinas, was known by the name of South Virginia.

Ву

ottest roved refent ty of of its o will

party liberway not

most

tences es ufe

t had
g unn, fo
have
y the
enfive,
whom

whom nplary n the Virgi-

n into were ttoned hang-

been nces. vland, 234 An Account of the European

By the Spaniards it was considered as part of Florida, which country they made to extend from New Mexico to the Atlantic ocean. By them it was first discovered; but they treated the natives with an inhumanity, which filled them with so violent an hatred to the Spanish name, as rendered their settlement there very difficult; nor did they push it vigorously, as the country shewed no marks of producing gold or silver, the only things for which the Spaniards then valued any country. Florida therefore remained under an entire neglect in Europe, until the reign of Charles the ninth, king of France.

The celebrated leader c. the protestants in that kingdom, the admiral Chastillon, who was not only a great commander but an able statesman, was a man of too comprehensive views not to fee the advantages of a fettlement in America; he procured two vessels to be fitted out for discoveries upon that coast. He had it probably in his thoughts to retire thither with those of his persuasion, if the fuccess which hitherto suited so ill with his great courage and conduct, should at last entirely destroy his cause in France. These ships in two months arrived upon the coast of America, near the river now called Albemarle in the province of North Carolina. The French gave the Indians to understand in the best manner they were able, that they

wer ther of t

this cour fatist the c fix (to be ly de first (they who king intell confi not i peopl comn they foon a lary thoug time St. Ba colony privat

failed

murd

were

SETTLEMENTS in AMERICA. 235
were enemies to the Spaniards, which secured

them a friendly reception, and the good offices of the inhabitants. They were, however, in

no condition to make any fettlement.

art of

xtend

reated filled

panish

e very

fly, as

lucing ch the

Florida

lect in

ninth,

ants in who

an able

henfive

fettleveffels

t coast.

o retire if the

vith his

last en-These

he coast

l Albe-

arolina.

stand in

at they were

Вy

On their return to France, the admiral, at this time by the abominable policy of the court apparently in great favour, was fo well fatisfied with the account they had given of the country, that in 1564 he fitted out five or fix ships with as many hundred men aboard, to begin a colony there. This was accordingly done at the place of their landing in the first expedition. They built a fort here, which they called Fort Charles, as they called the whole country Carolina in honour of their king then reigning. The Spaniards, who had intelligence of their proceedings, dispatched a confiderable force to attack this colony, who not fatisfied with reducing it, put all the people to the fword after quarter given; and committing great outrages upon the natives, they paved the way for the vengeance which foon after fell upon them for fuch an unneceffary and unprovoked act of cruelty. though the admiral and his party were by this time destroyed in the infamous massacre of St. Bartholomew, and though the defign of a colony died with him, one M. de Gorgues, a private gentleman, fitted out some ships, which failed to that coast purely to revenge the murder of his countrymen, and his friends.

The

236 An ACCOUNT of the EUROPEAN

The Indians greedily embraced the opportunity of becoming affociates in the punishment of the common enemy. They joined in the siege of two or three forts the Spaniards had built there; they took them, and in all of them put the garrison to the sword without mercy.

Satisfied with this action the adventurers returned, and happily for us, the French court did not understand, blinded as they were by their bigotry, the advantages which might have been derived from giving America to the protestants, as we afterwards did to the dissenters, as a place of refuge; if they had taken this step, most certainly we should have either had no settlements in America at all, or they must have been small in extent, and precarious in their tenure, to what they are at this day.

CHAP. XX.

Carolina is fettled by the English. Its constitution. The lords proprietors resign their charter. Made a royal government, and divided into two provinces.

FTER the French expedition, the country of Carolina remained without any attention from Spaniards, French or English, until, as we observed in the article of Virginia, Sir Walter Raleigh projected an establishment

eftino that and entiper altil Ati Eu wa and diffior reign

reignot tha lor, lord Sha Ber cha that full the and

the

plai

the

fen!

opporounishined in aniards n all of without

enturers French as they which Ameris did to if they should erica at

extent,

at they

s constin their and di-

on, the without or Engrticle of cted an ishment

SETTLEMENTS in AMERICA. establishment there. It was not in the part now called Virginia, but in North Carolina, that our first unhappy settlements were made and destroyed. Afterwards the adventurers entered the bay of Chesapeak, and fixed a permanent colony to the Northward; fo that although Carolina was the first part of the Atlantic coast of America, which had an European colony, yet by an odd caprice it was for a long time deferted by both England and France, who fettled with infinitely more difficulty in climates much less advantageous or agreeable.

It was not until the year 1663, in the reign of Charles the fecond, that we had any notion of formally fettling that country. In that year the earl of Clare idon lord Chancellor, the duke of Albemarks, the lord Craven, lord Berkley, lord Ashley, afterwards earl of Shaftesbury, Sir George Carteret, Sir William Berkley, and Sir George Colleton, obtained a charter for the property and jurisdiction of that country, from the 31st degree of North latitude to the 36th; and being invested with full power to fettle and govern the country, they had the model of a constitution framed, and a body of fundamental laws compiled by the famous philosopher Mr. Locke. On this plan the lords proprietors themselves stood in the place of the king, gave their affent or diffent as they thought proper to all laws, appointed

238 An Account of the European pointed all officers, and bestowed all titles of In his turn one of these lords acted dignity. In the province they appointed for the rest. two other branches, in a good measure analogous to the legislature in England. made three ranks, or rather classes of nobility. The lowest was composed of those to whom they had made grants of twelve thousand acres of land, whom they called barons; the next order had twenty-fourthousand acres, or two baronies, with the title of cassiques; these were to answer our earls; the third had two cassiqueships, or forty-eight thousand acres, and were called landgraves, a title in that province analogous to duke. This body formed the upper house; their lands were not alienable by parcels. The lower house was formed, as it is in the other colonies, of reprefentatives from the several towns or counties. But the whole was not called, as in the rest of the plantations, an affembly, but a parliament.

They began their first settlement at a point of land towards the Southward of their district, between two navigable rivers, though of no long couse, called Ashley and Cowper rivers, and there laid the soundation of a city, called Charles-town, which was designed to be, what it now is, the capital of the province. They expended about twelve thousand pounds in the first settlement. But it was not chief-

ly t this obſ deri and fron mar men peor ed a then was port lies i as nu they which they jealo Eng the a fente prod day, hind prog great difpu lords

ly

by a

gave

es of acted inted ana-They oility. vhom usand rons; acres, ques; d had usand tle in body re not e was repreanties. e rest

point arrict, of no rivers, called o be, vince. ounds chief-

ly

a par-

ly to the funds of the lords proprietors, that this province owed its establishment. They observed what advantages the other colonies derived from opening an harbour for refugees; and not only from this consideration, but from the humane disposition of that excellent man who formed the model of their government, they gave an unlimited toleration to people of all religious persuasions. This induced a great number of diffenters, over whom the then government held a more severe hand than was confistent with justice or policy, to transport themselves with their fortunes and fami-They became foon at least lies into Carolina. as numerons as the churchmen; and though they displayed none of that frantic bigotry which difgraced the New England refugees, they could not preserve themselves from the jealousy and hatred of those of the church of England, who having a majority in one of the assemblies, attempted to exclude all disfenters from a right of fitting there. This produced diffentions, tumults, and riots every day, which tore the colony to pieces, and hindered it for many years from making that progress which might be expected from its great natural advantages. The pepole fell into disputes of no less violent a nature with the lords proprietors, and provoking the Indians by a series of unjust and violent actions, they gave occasion to two wars, in which however

240 An ACCOUNT of the EUROPEAN ever they were victorious, and subdued almost all the Indian nations within their own bounds at this side of the Apalachian mountains.

Their intestine distractions, and their foreign wars, kept the colony so low, that an act of parliament, if possible to prevent the last ruinous consequences of these divisions, put the province under the immediate care and infpection of the crown. The lords proprietors making a virtue of necessity, accepted a recompence of about twenty-four thousand pounds, both for the property and jurisdiction; except the earl Granville, who kept his eighth part of the property, which comprehends very near half of North Carolina, on that part which immediately borders upon the province of Virginia. Their constitution in those points wherein it differed from that of the other colonies, was altered; and the country, for the more commodious administration of affairs, was divided into two distinct independent governments, called North Carolina and South Carolina. This was in the year 1728. In a little time a firm peace was established with all the neighbouring Indian nations, the Cherokees, the Creeks, and the Cataubas; the province began to breathe from its internal quarrels, and its trade has advanced every year fince that time with an astonishing rapidity.

CHAP.

Sitz

are and thre cour thof is m on t finel fum but t year viole thou vet 1 quic the i dress Euro and i cont they thof

of M

CHAP. XXI.

Situation, climate, &c. of Carolina. Its animal and vegetable productions.

HESE two provinces lving between the 31st and 36th degrees of latitude, are upwards of four hundred miles in length, and in breadth to the Indian nations, near three hundred. The climate and foil in these countries, do not considerably differ from those of Virginia; but where they differ, it is much to the advantage of Carolina, which on the whole may be confidered one of the finest climates in the world. The heat in fummer is very little greater than in Virginia; but the winters are milder and shorter, and the year in all respects does not come to the same violent extremities. However the weather, though in general ferene as the air is healthy, yet like all American weather, it makes such quick changes, and those so sharp, as to oblige the inhabitants to rather more caution in their dress and diet, than we are obliged to use in Thunder and lightning is frequent; and it is the only one of our colonies upon the continent which is subject to hurricanes; but they are very rare, and not near fo violent as those of the West-Indies. Patr of the month of March, and all April, May, and the great-Vol. II. eít

ulmost ounds s.

eir fonat an nt the visions, te care ds proecepted oufand

eighth ds very at part e pron those of the ountry,

depenina and 1728. blifhed ns, the taubas; s inter-

ation of

ng rapi-

d every

HAP.

242 An ACCOUNT of the EUROPEAN

est part of June, are here inexpressibly temperate and agreeable, but in July, August, and for almost the whole of September, the heat is very intense; and though the winters are sharp, especially when the North-West wind prevails, yet they are feldom severe enough to freeze any confiderable water; affecting only the mornings and evenings, the frosts have never sufficient strength to resist the noon-day fun; so that many tender plants which do not stand the winter of Virginia, slourish in Carolina; for they have oranges in great plenty near Charles-town, and excellent in their kinds, both sweet and sour. Olives are rather neglected by the planter, than denied by the The vegetation of every kind of plant is here almost incredibly quick; for there is fomething so kindly in the air and foil, that where the latter has the most barren and unpromising appearance, if neglected for a while, of itself it shoots out an immense quantity of those various plants and beautiful flowering shrubs and flowers, for which this country is so famous, and of which Mr. Catesby is his Natural History of Carolina has made fuch fine drawings.

The whole country is in a manner one forest, where our planters have not cleared it. The trees are almost the same in every respect with those produced in Virginia; and by the different species of these, the quality of the

foil

ai

it

m

th

be

pla

pit

of

the

COL

is f

wh

Wo

Ipe

to c

the

upo

call

mar

all t

bear

in g

plen

fea a

is n

ther

colo

mpet, and e heat ers are wind ugh to g only have on-day do not Caroplenty 1 their e rather by the sind of ck; for air and barren cted for mmense eautiful ich this Mr. Calina has

ner one eared it.

respect the yof the soil

foil is easily known; for those grounds which bear the oak, the walnut, and the hickory, are extremely fertile; they are of a dark fand, intermixed with loam, and as all their land abounds with nitre, it is a long time before it is exhausted; for here they never use any The pine barren is the worst of all; manure. this is an almost perfectly white fand, yet it bears the pine tree and some other useful plants naturally, yielding, good profit in pitch, tar, and turpentine; when this species of land is cleared, for two or three years together it produces very tolerable crops of Indian corn and pease; and when it lies low and is flooded, it even answers well for rice. what is the best of all for this province, this worst species of its land is favourable to a species of the most valuable of all its products, to one of the kinds of indigo. There is another fort of ground, which lies low and wet upon the banks of some of their rivers; this is called swamp, which in some places is in a manner useless, in others it is far the richest of all their grounds; it is a black fat earth, and bears their great staple rice, which must have in general a rich moist soil, in the greatest plenty and perfection. The country near the fea and at the mouths of the navigable rivers, is much the worst; for most of the land there is of the species of the pale, light, sandycoloured ground; and what is otherwise in those R 2

244 An Account of the European those parts, is little better than an unhealthy and unprofitable falt marsh; but the country, as you advance in it, improves continually; and at an hundred miles distance from Charlestown, where it begins to grow hilly, the foil is of a prodigious fertility, fitted for every purpose of human life. The air is pure and wholfome, and the fummer heats much more temperate than in the flat country; for Carolina is all an even plain for eighty miles from the sea; no hill, no rock, scarce even a pebble to be met with: fo that the best part of the maritime country, from this sameness, must want something of the fine effect which its beautiful products would have by a more variegated and advantageous disposition; but nothing can be imagined more pleasant to the eye than the back country, and its fruitfulness is almost incredible. Wheat grows extremely well there, and yields a prodigious increase. In the other parts of Carolina they raise but little, where it is apt to mildew and spend itself in straw; and these evils the planters take very little care to redrefs, as they turn their whole attention to the culture of rice, which is more profitable, and in which they are unrivalled; being supplied with what wheat they want in exchange for this grain, from New York and Penfylvania.

The land in Carolina is very eafily cleared every where, as there is little or no underwood.

ared dertr th a ca th

be the far an

fro

in

in but of lare plie was or if

but mo the and eve

deta the fam wood. Their forests consist mostly of great trees at a considerable distance asunder; so that they can clear in Carolina more land in a week, than in the forests of Europe they can do in a month. Their method is to cut them at about a foot from the ground, and then saw the trees into boards, or convert them into staves, heading, or other species of lumber, according to the nature of the wood, or the demands at the market. If they are too far from navigation, they heap them together, and leave them to rot. The roots soon decay; and before, that they find no inconvenience from them, where land is so plenty.

The aboriginal animals of this country are in general the same with those of Virginia, but there is yet a greater number and variety of beautiful fowls. All the animals of Europe are here in plenty; black cattle are multiplied prodigiously. About fifty years ago, it was a thing extraordinary to have above three or four cows, now fome have a thousand; fome in North Carolina a great many more; but to have two or three hundred is very com-These ramble all day at pleasure in the forests; but their calves being separated, and kept in fenced pastures, the cows return every evening to them; they are then milked, detained all night, milked in the morning, and then let loofe again. The hogs range in the fame manner, and return like the cows, by

 R_3

having

cleared underwood.

ilthy

ntry,

ally;

irles-

e soil

every

e and

more

Caro-

from

peb-

art of

eness.

which

more

; but

to the

uitful-

vs ex-

ligious

a they

nildew

ils the

as they

ture of

which

h what

grain,

246 An Account of the European having shelter and some victuals provided for them at the plantation; these are vastly numerous, and many quite wild; many horned cattle and horses too run wild in their woods; though at their first settlement there was not one of these animals in the country. drive a great many cattle from North Carolina every year into Virginia, to be flaughtered there; and they kill and falt some beef, and a good deal of pork, for the West-Indies. within themselves; but the beef is neither so good, nor does it keep near so long as what is fent to the same market from Ireland. export a confiderable number of live cattle to Pensylvania and the West-Indies. Sheep are not fo plenty as the black cattle or hogs, neither is their flesh so good; their wool is very ordinary.

CHAP. XXII.

The commodities of Carolina for export. Rice, indigo, pitch and tar. Process in raising and manufacturing these commodities.

HE trade of Carolina, besides the lumber, provision, and the like, which it yields in common with the rest of America, has three great staple commodities, indigo, rice, and the produce of the pine, turpentine, tar, and pitch. The two former commodities

and An ref

of a g ple No the the to Por tior tiva the rife **fwe** the fpec rice Cap has they into dive of i qua and

at th

and

modities South Carolina has intirely to itself; and taking in North Carolina, this part of America yields more pitch and tar than all the rest of our colonies.

Rice anciently formed by itself the staple of this province; this wholsome grain makes a great part of the food of all ranks of people in the Southern parts of the world; in the Northern it is not so much in request. Whilst the rigour of the act of navigation obliged them to fend all their rice directly to England, to be re-shipped for the markets of Spain and Portugal; the charges incident to this regulation lay fo heavy upon the trade, that the cultivation of rice, especially in time of war, when these charges were greatly aggravated by the rise of the freight and insurance, hardly anfwered the charges of the planter; but now the legislature has relaxed the law in this respect, and permits the Carolinians to send their rice directly to any place to the Southward of This prudent indulgence Cape Finisterre. has again revived the rice trade; and though they have gone largely, and with great spirit into the profitable article of indigo, it has not diverted their attention from the cultivation of rice; they raise now above double the quantity of what they raised some years ago; and this branch alone of their commerce is, at the lowest estimation, worth one hundred and fifty thousand pounds sterling annually.

Indigo

Rice, g and

d for

ume-

catoods;

s not They

Caro-

iugh-

beef, ndies.

er fo

hat is

They

tle to

p are

hogs, rool is

lumwhich erica, ndigo, rpencomdities 248 An Account of the European

Indigo is a dye made from a plant of the fame name, which probably was fo called from India, where it was first cultivated, and from whence we had for a confiderable time the whole of what we confumed in Europe. This plant is very like the fern when grown, and when young hardly diftinguishable from lucern-grass; its leaves in general are pennated, and terminated by a fingle lobe; the flowers confift of five leaves, and are of the papilionaceous kind, the uppermost petal being larger and rounder than the rest, and lightly furrowed on the fide; the lower ones are short and end in a point; in the middle of the flower is fituated the stile, which afterwards becomes a pod, containing the feeds.

They cultivate three forts of indigo in Carolina, which demand the same variety of soils. First, the French or Hispaniola indigo, which striking a long tap-root, will only slourish in a deep rich soil; and therefore, though an excellent fort, it is not so much cultivated in the maritime parts of Carolina, which are generally sandy; but no part of the world is more sit to produce it in perfection than the same country, an hundred miles backwards; it is neglected too on another account, for it hardly bears a winter so sharp as that of

Carolina.

The fecond fort, which is the fall

The second fort, which is the false guatemala, or true bahama, bears the winter better,

is a great ground counthe its d

is in the term ness and lity amount the plant flue

rally equitrent after rally if a July cutte automass day,

mar

7

is a more tall and vigorous plant, is raised in greater quantities from the same compass of ground; is content with the worst soils in the country, and is therefore more cultivated than the first sort, though inferior in the quality of its dye.

The third fort is the wild indigo, which is indigenous here; this, as it is a native of the country, answers the purposes of the planter the best of all, with regard to the hardiness of the plant, the easiness of the culture, and the quantity of the produce; of the quality there is some dispute, not yet settled amongst the planters themselves; nor can they as yet distinctly tell when they are to attribute the faults of their indigo to the nature of the plant, to the seasons, which have much influence upon it, or to some defect in the manufacture.

The time of planting the indigo, is generally after the first rains succeeding the vernal equinox; the seed is sowed in small straight trenches, about eighteen or twenty inches asunder; when it is at its height, it is generally eighteen inches tall. It is fit for cutting, if all things answer well, in the beginning of July. Towards the end of August a second cutting is obtained; and if they have a mild autumn, there is a third cutting at Michaelmas; the indigo land must be weeded every day, and the plants cleansed from worms, and the

is

the

and

time

rope.

own, from

pen-

; the f the

l be-

and

ones iddle

after-

foils.

vhich

th in

n exed in

h are

rld is

n the

ards; for it

at of

guate-

octter,

ds. 1 Ca250 An ACCOUNT of the EUROPEAN

the plantation attended with the greatest care and diligence; about twenty-five negroes may manage a plantation of fifty acres, and compleat the manufacture of the drug, besides providing their own necessary subsistence, and that of the planter's family. Each acre yields, if the land be very good, sixty or seventy pounds weight of indigo; at a medium the produce is sifty pounds. When the plant is beginning to blossom it is sit for cutting; and when cut, great care ought to be taken to bring it to the steeper, without pressing or shaking it, as a great part of the beauty of the indigo depends upon the sine farina which adheres to the leaves of this plant.

The apparatus for making indigo is pretty considerable, though not very expensive; for besides a pump, the whole consists only of vats and tubs of cypress wood, common and cheap in this country. The indigo when cut is first laid in a vat about twelve or fourteen foot long, and four deep, to the height of about fourteen inches, to macerate and digest. Then this vessel, which is called the steeper, is filled with water; the whole having lain from about twelve or fixteen hours, according to the weather, begins to ferment, swell, rise, and grow fenfibly warm; at this time spars of wood are run across to prevent its rising too much, and a pin is then fet to mark the highest point of its ascent; when it falls betatio abate cock which that man exce as the

W

the p fecor of b work until the r lay th as th Whe thirty state requi mude other befor begir

to fir they on a hope

low

care

may

com-

fides

, and

ields,

unds

duce

ining

cut,

o the

as a

pends

eaves

pretty

; for

nly of

n and

n cut

rteen

ht of

igest.

per, is

from

to the

and

rs of

g too

the

is below low this mark, they judge that the fermentation has attained its due pitch, and begins to abate; this directs the manager to open a cock, and let off the water into another vat, which is called the beater; the gross matter that remains in the first vat, is carried off to manure the ground, for which purpose it is excellent, and new cuttings are put in as long as the harvest of this weed continues,

When the water, strongly impregnated with the particles of the Indigo, has run into the second vat or beater, they attend with a fort of bottomless buckets, with long handles, to work and agitate it; which they do inceffantly until it heats, froths, ferments, and rifes above the rim of the vessel which contains it; to allay this violent fermentation, oil is thrown in as the froth rifes, which instantly finks it. When this beating has continued for twenty, thirty, or thirty-five minutes, according to the state of the weather, (for in cool weather it requires the longest continued beating) a small muddy grain begins to be formed, the falts and other particles of the plant united and dissolved before with the water, are now reunited, and begin to granulate.

To discover these particles the better, and to find when the liquor is sufficiently beaten, they take up some of it from time to time on a plate or in a glass; when it appears in an hopeful condition, they let loose some lime

w ater

252 An ACCOUNT of the EUROPEAN

water from an adjacent veffel, gently stirring the whole, which wonderfully facilitates the operation; the indigo granulates more fully, the liquor assumes a purplish colour, and the whole is troubled and muddy; it is now fuffered to settle; then the clearer part is let to run off into another succession of vessels, from whence the water is conveyed away as fast as it clears at the top, until nothing remains but a thick mud, which is put into bags of coarse These are hung up and left for some time until the moisture is entirely drained off. To finish the drying this mud is turned out of the bags, and worked upon boards of some porous timber with a wooden spatula; it is frequently exposed to the morning and evening fun, but for a short time only; and then it is put into boxes or frames, which is called the curing, exposed again to the sun in the same cautious manner, until with great labour and attention the operation is finished, and that valuable drug called indigo, fitted for the mar-The greatest skill and care is required in every part of the process, or there may be great danger of ruining the whole; the water must not be suffered to remain too short or too long a time, either in the steeper or beater; the beating itself must be nicely managed so as not to exceed or fall short; and in the curing, the exact medium between too much or too little drying is not eafily attained. Nothing but

but thef

ness it is the is go fire the

in vertice in Covifice they faired diliger must be courant.

Ir Nor turp

nion

these matters.

tirring

tes the

fully,

nd the

w fuf-

s let to

, from

fast as

ins but

coarle

r fome

ed off.

lout of

f fome

a; it is

l even-

d then

called

ie same

our and

id that

e mar-

aired in

nay be

e water

hort or

beater;

aged fo

curing,

or too

lothing

but

There are two methods of trying the goodness of indigo; by fire and by water; if it swims it is good, if it sinks it is naught, the heavier the worse; so if it wholly disloves in water it is good. Another way of proving is, by the fire ordeal; if it entirely burns away it is good, the adulterations remain untouched.

There is perhaps no branch of manufacture, in which so large profits may be made upon so moderate a fund, as that of indigo; and there is no country in which this manufacture can be carried on to fuch advantage as in Carolina, where the climate is healthy, provision plentiful and cheap, and every thing necessary for that business had with the greatest ease. To do justice to the Carolinians, they have not neglected these advantages; and if they continue to improve them with the same fpirit in which they have begun, and attend diligently to the quality of their goods, they must naturally and necessarily come to supply the whole confumption of the world with this commodity; and consequently make their country the richest, as it is the pleasantest and most fertile part of the British dominions.

In all parts of Carolina, but especially in North Carolina, they make great quantities of turpentine, tar and pitch. They are all the produce

254 An ACCOUNT of the EUROPEAN

produce of the pine. The turpentine is drawn fimply from incisions made in the tree; they are made from as great an height as a man can reach with an hatchet; these incisions meet at the bottom of the tree in a point, where they pour their contents into a vessel placed to re-There is nothing further in this ceive them. process, But tar requires a more considerable apparatus and great trouble. They prepare a circular floor of clay, declining a little towards the center; from this is laid a pipe of wood, the upper part of which is even with the floor, and reaches ten feet without the circumference; under the end the earth is dug away, and barrels placed to receive the tar as it runs. Upon the floor is built up a large pile of pine wood split in pieces, and surrounded with a wall of earth, leaving only a small aperture at the top where the fire is fire kindled. When the fire begins to burn, they cover this opening likewise to confine the fire from flaming out, and to leave only sufficient heat to force the tar downwards to the floor. They temper the heat as they please, by running a stick into the wall of clay, and giving it air. is made by boiling tar in large iron kettles fet in furnaces, or burning it in round clay holes made in the earth. The greatest quantity of pitch and tar is made in North Carolina.

CHAP.

No

ble me ali mil of the is that t

lan

ract

fore excellent fever are cocland the North

as

CHAP. XXIII.

North Carolina, fome account of its settlement. Bad state of that province. Is considerably improved. Chief town.

which compose Carolina, ten navigable rivers of a very long course, and innumerable smaller ones, which fall into them, all abounding in fish. About sifty or sixty miles from the sea, there are falls in most of the great rivers, which as you approach their sources, become more frequent. This is the case of almost all the American rivers; at these falls, those who navigate these rivers land their goods, carry them beyond the cataract on horses or waggons, and then re-ship them below or above it.

The mouths of the rivers in North Carolina form but ordinary harbours, and do not admit, except one at Cape Fear, vessels of above seventy or eighty tons; so that larger ships are obliged to lie off in a sound called Ocacock, which is formed between some islands and the continent. This lays a weight upon their trade by the expence of lighterage. North Carolina, partly upon that occasion, but principally that the first settlements were made as near as possible to the capital, which lies considerably

AP.

drawn

they an can

neet at

e they

to rein this lerable

repare

wards wood,

e floor,

rence;

y, and

runs.
of pine

with a

ture at When

open-

aming

b force

tem-

a stick

Pitch

kettles

d clay

quan-

h Ca-

An ACCOUNT of the EUROPEAN

confiderably to the Southward, was greatly neglected For a long time it was but ill inhabited, and by an indigent and diforderly people, who had little property, and hardly any law or government to protect them in what they had. As commodious land grew fcarce in the other colonies, people in low circumstances observing that a great deal of excellent and convenient land was yet to be patented in North Carolina, were induced by that circumstance to plant themselves there. Others who faw how they prospered, followed their example. The government became more attentive to the place as it became more valuable; by degrees fomething of a better order was introduced. The effect of which is, that though by no means as wealthy as South Carolina, North Carolina has many more white people; things begin to wear a face of fettlement; and the difficulties they have lain under are not fo many nor fo grea: as to make us neglect all future efforts, or hinder us from forming very reasonable expectations of seeing the trade of this country, with proper management, become a flourishing and fruitful branch of the British American commerce. That even now it is far from contemptible, may appear by a lift of their exported commodities, which I shall subjoin.

Edenton was formerly the capital of North Carolina, if a trifling village can deserve that denomination:

Do the ady is l wh rati H_0 me gati war

infu

con

Char Nort Its fi rably river that (two l town

both

denomination; but the present governor Mr. Dobbs has projected one further South upon the river Neus; which, though it has the advantage of being something more central, is by no means equally well fituated for trade, which ought always to be of the first consideration in whatever regards any of the colonies. However, none of their towns are worth mentioning; the conveniency of inland navigation in all our Southern colonies, and the want of handicraftsmen, is a great and almost insuperable obstacle to their ever having any confiderable.

CHAP. XXIV.

An account of Charles-town. Port-Royal. The trade of Carolina. Its vast increase. Articles not sufficiently attended to there.

HE only town in either of the Carolinas which can draw our attention is Charles-town; and this is one of the first in North America for fize, beauty, and traffic. Its fituation I have already mentioned, so admirably chosen at the confluence of two navigable rivers. Its harbour is good in every respect, but that of a bar, which hinders vessels of more than two hundred tons burthen from entering. The town is regularly and pretty strongly fortified both by nature and art; the streets are well Vol. II. cut;

eatly ll inderly ardly m in grew

low al of to be duced **felves**

pered, iment ecame

of a ect of ealthy many

wear a they grea. rts, or

le exuntry, urisherican

n coneir exibjoin.

North ve that ation;

258 An Account of the European cut; the houses are large and well built, and rent extremely high. The church is spacious, and executed in a very handsome taste, exceeding every thing of that kind which we have in America. Here besides the several denominations of differents have their meeting houses. It contains about eight hundred houses, and is the seat of the governor and the place or meeting of the affembly. handsome equipages are kept here. planters and merchants are rich, and well bred; the people are showy and expensive in their dress and way of living; so that every thing conspires to make this by much the liveliest and politest place, as it is one of the richest too in all America.

The best harbour in this province is far to the Southward, on the borders of Georgia, called Port-Royal. This might give a capacious and safe reception to the largest sleets of the greatest bulk and burthen; yet the town, which is called Beaufort, built upon an island of the same name with the harbour, is not as yet considerable, but it bids fair in time for becoming the first trading town in this part of America.

The import trade of South Carolina from Great Britain and the West-Indies, is the same in all respects with that of the rest of the colonies, and it is very large. Their trade with the Indiana is likewise in a very flourish-

ing

n

ta

h

m

pr

pr

In

D

Pi

Ta

Tu

SETTLEMENTS in AMERICA. ing condition. As for its export, both the nature of that, and its rodigious increase, may be discerned from the following comparative tables, which let us fee how much this colony has really advanced in a few years; as an attentive consideration of its natural advantages must shew us how much it must advance, if properly managed, as there is scarce any improvement of which this excellent country is not capable.

Exported from Charles-town.

In the year 1731. Indigo, 00,000 pounds Indigo, 216,924 pds. Deerskins, 300 hds. Pitch, 10,750 barrels Tar, 2,063 ditto Turpent. 759 ditto Beef, pork, &c. not Tar, particularized.

and

cious,

, ex-

h we

veral

meet-

ndred

d the

everal The

well ive in

every

h the of the

far to

eorgia,

capa-

eets of

town.

ifland

is not ne for

is part

n from

is the

of the trade

burish-

ing

In the year 1754. 41,957 barrels Rice, 104,682 barrels Deer skins, 460 hogsheids 114 bund. 508 loose Pitch, 5,869 barrels 2,945 ditto Turpentine, 759 ditto Beef, 416 ditto Pork, 1,560 ditto Ind. corn, 16,428 bush. Peas, 9,162 ditto Tanedlea. 4, 196 hides Hides in the hair 1,200 Shing.1,114,000 Staves, 206,000 Lumb. 395,000 feet Belides

260 An ACCOUNT of the EUROPEAN

Besides a great deal of live cattle, horses, cedar, cypress, and walnut plank; bees wax,

myrtle, and some raw filk and cotton.

North Carolina, which is reputed one of the least flourishing of our settlements, and which certainly lay under great difficulties, yet is within a few years greatly improved. The consequence of this inferior province may appear by the following view of its trade, which I can take upon me to say is not very far from being exact; it is at least sufficiently so to enable us to form a proper idea of this province, and its commerce.

Exported from all the ports of North Carolina

in 1753.
Tar, 61,528 barrels.
Pitch, 12,055 ditto.
Turpentine, 10,429 ditto.
Staves, 762,330 no.
Shingles, 2,500,000 no.
Lumber, 2,000,647 feet.
Corn, 61,580 bushels.
Peas, about 10,000 ditto.
Pork & Beef, 3,300 barrels.

Tobacco, about 100 hogsheads.
Tanned lea. about 1000 hundred weight.

Deer skins in all ways, about 30,000. Besides a very considerable quantity of wheat, rice, bread, potatoes, bces-wax, tallow, candles, bacon, hog's lard, some cotton, and a vast ce lai ca So me thi gir ex ve fki car Bo

of ho a k pro tak im

fu

cli tai pro inc ed

first Ca foo

rai

ful

the nich rith-nfe-r by can eing le us d its

fes,

olina

ght.
heat,
canind a
vaft

vast deal of squared timber of walnut and cedar, and hoops and headings of all forts. Of late they raise indigo, but in what quantity I cannot determine, for it is all exported from South Carolina. They raise likewise much more tobacco than I have mentioned, but this, as it is produced on the frontiers of Virginia, so it is exported from thence. They export too no inconfiderable quantity of beaver, racoon, otter, fox, minx, and wild cats skins, and in every ship a good deal of live cattle, besides what they vend in Virginia. Both in North and South Carolina they have made frequent, but I think not vigorous nor fufficiently continued efforts in the cultivation of cotton and filk. What they have fent home of these commodities is of so excellent a kind, as to give us great encouragement to proceed in a business which we have not taken to heart with all that warmth that its importance in trade, and the fitness of the climate for these most valuable articles certainly deferves. It was a long time before this province went into the profitable trade of indigo, notwithstanding a premium subsisted a good many years for all that should be raised in our plantations; the thing was at first despaired of, and it was never judged that Carolina could produce this drug; but no fooner had a few shewn a spirited and successful example, than all went into it to heartily,

that though it is but about fix years fince. they began, I am informed that five hundred thousand weigh was made last year; and as they go on, in a very little time they will supply the market with a commodity, which before we purchased every ounce from the French and Spaniards. Silk requires still more trouble, and a closer attention; as yet it proceeds with languor, nor will a premium alone ever suffice to fet on foot in a vigorous manner a manufacture, which will find great difficulties in any country, which does not abound in hands that can work for very trifling wages. want of this advantage in Carolina, though no part of the world is fitter for this business, and no business could be so advantageous to England, will for a very long time be an impediment to the manufacture of raw filk, unless. fonte proper, well studied, and vigorously executed scheme be set on foot for that purpose; and furely it is a matter worthy of a very ferious confideration. America is our great resource; this will remain to us when other branches of our trade are decayed, or exist no more; and therefore we ought to grudge no expence that may enable them to answer this end so effectually, as one day to supply the many losses we have already had, and the many more we have but too much reason to apprehend in our commerce. These expences are not like the expences of war, heavy in their

the building of tar of pro

Sei

the and rate The bed vin bar wo the by upon

the

tur

TCC. lred d as upbench ble, vith

Tice nus in nds Γhc no 1 and ngedilefs.

ofe: fereat her no

ex-

: no this the the.

n to ıces

in. 1eir

their nature, and precarious in their effects; but when judiciously ordered, the certain and infallible means of rich and successive harvests of gain to the latest posterity, at the momentary charge of a comparatively fmall quantity of feed, and of a moderate husbandry to the present generation.

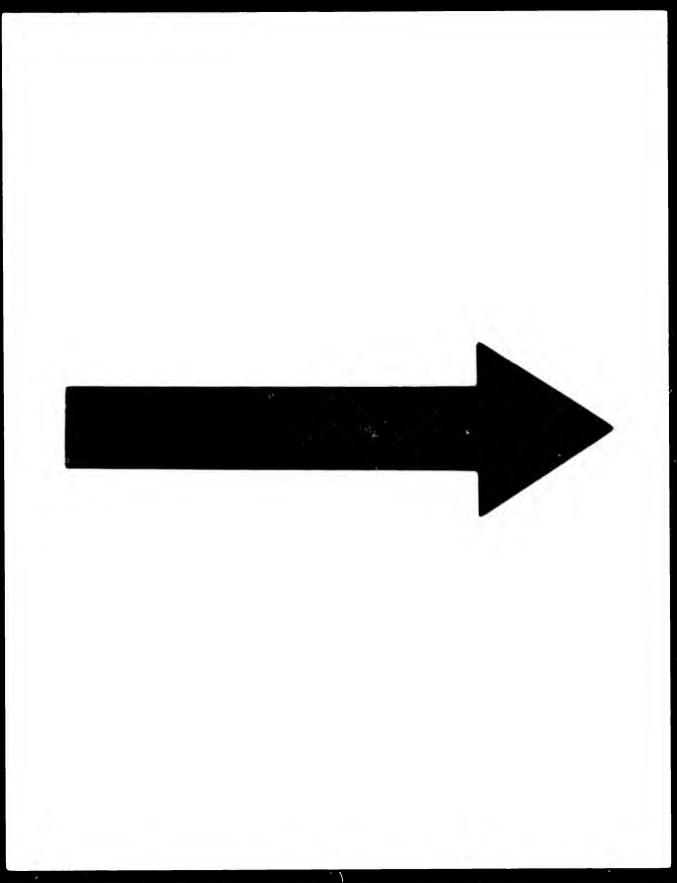
CHAP. XXV.

Settlement of Georgia. Reasons for it. The plan of the settlement defective. Attempts to remedy it.

IN the year 1732, the government observing that a great tract of land in Carolina upon the borders of the Spanish Florida lay waste and unfettled, resolved to erect it into a separate province, and to fend a colony thither. This they were the rather induced to do, because it lay on the frontier of all our provinces naked and defenceless; whereas if it could be properly settled, it would be a strong barrier to them upon that side, or at least would be sufficient to protect Carolina from the incursions which the Indians, instigated by the French or Spaniards, might make upon that province. They had it likewise in their view to raise wine, oyl, and filk, and to turn the industry of this new people from the

S 4

tim-



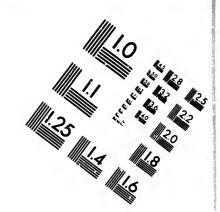
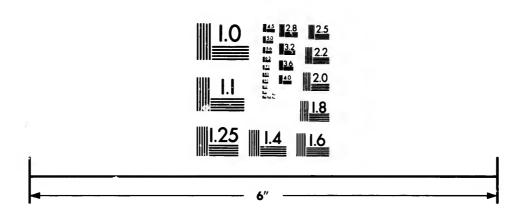


IMAGE EVALUATION TEST TARGET (MT-3)



Photographic Sciences Corporation

23 WEST MAIN STRESS WEBSTER, N.Y. 14580 (716) 872-4503

STATE OF THE STATE



264 An ACCOUNT of the EUROPEAN timber and provision trade, which the other colonies had gone into too largely, into channels more advantageous to the public. Laudable designs in every respect; though perhaps the means which were taken to put them in execution, were not altogether answerable.

That whole country which lies between the rivers Savannah and Alatamaha North and South, and from the Atlantic ocean on the East, to the great South-Sea upon the West, was vested in trustees; at the end of that period the property ir chief was to revert to the crown. This country extends about fixty miles from North and South near the sea, but widens in the more remote parts to above one hundred and fifty. From the sea to the Apalachian mountains it is not much short of three hundred.

In pursuance of the original design, the trustees resolved to encourage poor people to settle in the province, which had been committed to their care; and to this purpose found them in necessaries to transport them into a country, of which they had previously published a most exaggerated and flattering description. In reality the country differs little from South Carolina, but that the summers are yet hotter, and the soil in the general of a poorer kind. The colony was sent over under the care of Mr. Oglethorpe, who very

pa m

bo ne the jud de ted cur po ne hay job

and we inc thi cor five ori

fet

idl

mo giv hei very generously bestowed his own time and pains, without any reward, for the advance-

ment of the settlement.

The truftees had very well observed, that many of our colonies, especially that of South Carolina, had been very much endangered both internally and externally, by fuffering the negroes to grow fo much more numerous than the whites. An error of this kind, they judged, in a colony which was not only to defend itself, but to be in some fort a protection to the others, would have been inexcusable; they for that reason forbid the importation of negroes into Georgia. next place, they observed that great mischiefs happened in the other settlements from making vast grants of land, which the grantees jobbed out again to the discouragement of the fettlers; or what was worse, suffered to lie idle and uncultivated. To avoid this mischief. and to prevent the people from becoming wealthy and luxurious, which they thought inconfistent with the military plan upon which this colony was founded, they allowed in the common course of each family but twentyfive acres; and none could, according to the original scheme, by any means come to possess more than five hundred. Neither did they give an inheritance in fee simple, or to the heirs general of the fettlers, but granted them their lands inheritable only by their male isTue.

ther
hanaudhaps
n in

le.
ween
lorth
n on
the
f that
ert to

fixty, but above to the

ort cf

the ple to comirpose them

ioufly tering differs fumgene-

s fent who very

issue. They likewise forbid the importation of rum into the province, to prevent the great disorders which they observed to arise in the other parts of North America, from the abuse

of spirituous liquors.

These regulations, though well intended, and meant to bring about very excellent purposes, yet it might at first, as it did afterwards appear, that they were made without sufficiently confulting the nature of the country, or the disposition of the people which they For in the first place, as the cliregarded. mate is excessively hot, and field work very laborious in a new colony, as the ground must be cleared, tilled and fowed, all with great and incessant toil, for their bare subsistence, the load was too heavy for the white men, especially men who had not been seasoned to the country. The consequence of which was, that the greatest part of their time, all the heat of the day, was spent in idleness, which brought certain want along with it. It is true that all our colonies on the continent, even Virginia and Carolina, were originally fettled without the help of negroes. white men were obliged to the labour, and they underwent it, because they then saw no other way; but it is the nature of man, not to fubmit to extraordinary hardships, in one spot, when they see their neighbours on another, without any difference in the circum**stances**

ftar diti to end the

a t feld upo oug in ftril this **fon** mar pro prop maj but unle forta rect for mul fmal stan tem whi pass

> herit difco

tation great n the abuse

nded.

t purwards
fuffiuntry,
they
ne clik very
d muft
great
ftence,

men,

ned to which ne, all leness, it. It tinent, ginally

r, and faw no n, not in one on an-ircum-frances

SETTLEMENTS in AMERICA. 267 stances of things, in a much more easy condition. Besides, there were no methods taken to animate them under the hardships they endured. All things contributed to dispirit them.

A levelling scheme in a new colony is a thing extremely unadviseable. Men are feldom induced to leave their country, but upon some extraordinary prospects; there ought always to be fomething of a vaftness in the view that is presented to them, to strike powerfully upon their imagination; and this will operate, because men will never reafon well enough to see, that the majority of mankind are not endued with dispositions proper to make a fortune any where, let the proposed advantages be what they will. majority of mankind must always be indigent; but in a new fettlement they must be all so, unless some persons there are on such a comfortable and substantial footing, as to give direction and vigour to the industry of the rest; for in every well contrived building there must be strong beams and joists, as well as fmaller bricks, tiles and laths. Persons of substance found themselves discouraged from attempting a fettlement, by the narrow bounds which no industry could enable them to pass; and the design of confirming the inheritance to the male line was an additional discouragement. The settlers found themfelves

felves not upon a par with the other colonies. There was an obvious inconvenience in leaving no provision at all for females, as in a new colony the land must be, for some time at least, the only wealth of the family. quantity of twenty-five acres was undoubtedly too small a portion, as it was given without any confideration of the quality of the land, and was therefore in many places of very little value. Add to this, that it was clogged after a short free tenure, with a much greater quit-rent than is paid in our best and longest fettled colonies. Indeed through the whole manner of granting land, there appeared, I know not what low attention to the trifling profits that might be derived to the trustees or the crown by rents and escheats, which clogged the liberal scheme that was first laid down, and was in itself extremely injudicious. When you have a flourishing colony, with extensive settlements, from the smallest quit-rents the crown receives a large revenue; but in an ill-settled province, the greatest rents make but a poor return, and yet are fufficient to burthen and impoverish the people.

The tail male grants were so grievous, that the trustees themselves corrected that error in a short time. The prohibition of rum, though specious in appearance, had a very bad effect. The waters in this unsettled country running through such an extent of forest, were not

wholfome

tive was the ma diff was ved ly c lum but tion

Cold

littl

taife the more than that

tran

SETTLEMENTS in AMERICA. 269 wholsome drinking, and wanted the corrective of a little spirit, as the settlers themselves wanted something to support their strength in the extraordinary and unusual heat of the climate, and the dampness of it in several places disposing them to agues and severs. But what was worse, this prohibition in a manner deprived them of the only vent they had for the only commodities they could send to market, lumber and corn, which could sell no where but in the sugar islands, and with this restriction of negroes and rum, they could take very little from them in return.

CHAP. XXVI.

Colony new modelled. Faults in the new constitution. Trade of this province.

LL these, and several other inconveniencies in the plan of the settlement, raised a general discontent in the inhabitants; they quarrelled with one another, and with their magistrates; they complained; they remonstrated; and finding no satisfaction, many of them sled out of Georgia, and dispersed themselves where they deemed the encouragement better, to all the other colonies. So that of above two thousand people, who had transported themselves from Europe, in a little time not above six or seven hundred were to

us, that error in

lonies.

leav-

a new

ime at

abtedly

vithout

e land,

f very

logged

greater

longest

whole ared, I

trifling trustees

which

irst laid dicious.

vith ex-

it-rents

it in an

ake but

The

though d effect. running rere not

nelsome

be found in Georgia; fo far were they from increasing. The mischief grew worse and worse every day, until the government revoked the grant to the trustees, took the province into their own hands, and annulled all the particular regulations that were made. It was then left exactly on the same footing with Carolina.

Though this step has probably saved the colony from entire ruin, yet it was not perhaps so well done to neglect entirely the first views upon which it was fettled. These were undoubtedly judicious; and if the methods taken to compass them were not so well directed, it was no argument against the designs themselves, but a reason for some change in the instruments designed to put them in execution. Certainly nothing wants a regulation more, than the dangerous inequality in the number of negroes and whites in fuch of our provinces where the former are used. rolina, in spite of its great wealth, is really in a more defenceless condition, than a knot of poor townships on the frontiers of New England. In Georgia, the first error of absolutely prohibiting the use of negroes, might be turned to very good account; for they would have received the permission to employ them under what qualifications soever, not as a restriction, but as a favour and indulgence; and by executing whatever regulations we should make in this

fe

in

ać

be

th

ca

co

fu

in

fac

nu

fro

tin

no

tic

an

tui

gir

do

wł

qu

to

wi

ith Ca-

red the ot perhe first se were nethods directdesigns e in the ecution.

more, numur prouth Caally in a of poor

ngland.
y prohiirned to
have ren under
triction.

execumake in this this point with strictness, by degrees we might see a province fit to answer all the ends of defence and traffic too; whereas we have let them use such a latitude in that affair, which we were so earnest to prevent, that Georgia instead of being any defence to Carolina, does actually stand in need of a considerable force to defend itself.

As for the scheme of vines and filk, we were extremely eager in this respect in the beginning; and very supine ever since. that time fuch a defign was clearly impracticable; because a few people seated in a wild country must first provide every thing for the fupport of life, by raifing of corn and breeding of cattle, before they can think of manufactures of any kind; and they must grow numerous enough to spare a number of hands from that most necessary employment, before they can fend fuch things in any degree of cheapness or plenty to a good market. now there is little faid of either of these articles, though the province is longer fettled and grown more populous. But the misfortune is, that though no people upon earth originally conceive things better than the English do, they want the unremitting perfeverance which is necessary to bring designs of consequence to perfection. We are apr fuddenly to change our measures upon any failure; without fufficiently confidering whether the failure

failure has been owing to a fault in the scheme itself; this does not arise from any defect peculiar to our people, for it is the fault of mankindin general, if left to themselves. What is done by us is generally done by the spirit of the people; as far as that can go we advance, but no farther. We want political regulations, and a steady plan in government, to remedy the defects that must be in all things, which depend merely on the character and disposition of the people.

At present Georgia is beginning to emerge, though flowly, out of the difficulties that attended its first establishment. It is still but indifferently peopled, though it is now twentyfix years fince its first settlement. Not one of our colonies was of so slow a growth, though none had so much of the attention of the government, or of the people in general, or raised so great expectations in the beginning. They export some corn and lumber to the West-Indies; they raise some rice, and of late are going with fuccess into indigo. It is not not to be doubted but in time, when their internal divisions are a little better composed, the remaining errors in the government corrected, and the people begin to multiply, that they will become a useful province.

Georgia has two towns already known in trade; Savannah the capital, which stands very well for business about ten miles from the sea,

upon

ta

gı

T

roi

tra We

Ca

for

inf

be

mo

col

upon a noble river of the same name, which is navigable two hundred miles further for large boats, to the fecond town, called Augusta; this stands upon a spot of ground of the greatest fertility, and is so commodionsly situarit of ted for the Indian trade, that from the first establishment of the colony it has been in a tions, very flourishing condition, and maintained very medy early fix hundred whites in that trade alone. vhich The Indian nations on their borders are the upsition per and lower Creeks, the Chickesaws, and the Cherokees; who are fome of the most numeierge, rous and powerful tribes in America. at attrade of skins with this people is the largest ut inwe have, it takes in that of Georgia, the two renty-Carolinas and Virginia. We deal with them ot one somewhat in furs likewise, but they are of an hough inferior fort. All species of animals, that ie gobear the fur, by a wife providence have it

cold, the better they are clad.

CHAP. XXVII.

more thick, and of a fofter and finer kind as

you go to the northward; the greater the

Nova Scotia, the time and reasons of its settlement. French there. Climate and foil. Annapolis, Halifax and Lunenburgh.

THE last province we have settled, or rather began to fettle upon the continent of North America, is Nova Scotia. This Vol. II.

neme t pelt of What ance,

ıl, or nning. o the of late is not eir inposed,

wn in ds very he sea, upon

it cor-

y, that

274 An Account of the European

This vast province, called by the French Acadie, has New England and the Atlantic ocean to the South and South-West, and the river and gulph of St. Laurence to the North and North-East. It lies between the 44th 50th degrees of North latitude, and though in a very favourable part of the temperate zone, has a winter of an almost insupportable length and coldness, continuing at least seven months in the year; to this immediately fucceeds, without the intervention of any thing that may called spring, a summer of an heat as violent as the cold, though of no long continuance; and they are wrapt in the gloom of a perpetual fog, even long after the summer season has commenced. In most parts, the foil is thin and barren, the corn it produces of a shrivelled kind like rye, and the grass intermixed with a cold spungy moss. However it is not uniformly bad; there are tracts in Nova Scotia, which do not yield to the best land in New England.

Unpromising as this country is, yet neglecting all those delightful tracts to the Southward, it was here that some of the first European settlements were made. The French seated themselves here before they made any establishment in Canada; but whatever unaccountable ignorance influenced their choice, the industry and vigour of that time deserves our applause; for though they had infinitely more

difficulties

n

te

Οl

th

be

iſl

fr

tre

bo

ly T W fo rench lantic nd the North 44th , and teminfuping at iis imtion of ımmer hough wrapt ong afd. In en, the ke rye,

reglecthward,
ropean
feated
ny estaaccounce, the
ves our
ly more
ficulties

fpungy

; there

ot yield

SETTLEMENTS in AMERICA. difficulties to struggle with than we have at this day, and not the hundredth part of the succours from Europe, yet they subsisted in a tolerable manner, and increased largely; when the colony which in our days we have fixed there, if the support of the royal hand was withdrawn but for a moment, after all the immense sums which have been expended in its establishment, would undoubtedly fink into nothing. It is with difficulty it subsists, even encouraged and supported as it is. Yet the defign of establishing a colony here, with whatever difficulties it might have been attended, was a very prudent measure; for the French would undoubtedly have profited of our neglects, and have by some means got this country into their hands, to the great annovance of all our colonies, and to the great benefit both of their fishery and their sugar islands.

This country has frequently changed hands from one private proprietor to the other, and from the French to the English nation, backward and forward; until the treaty of Utrecht established our right in it finally; as the treaty of Aix la Chapelle confirmed it. But both were deficient in not ascertaining distinctly what bounds this province ought to have. This was left to be adjusted by commissaries. Whilst they were debating, the French built forts, and secured such a part of the province

T 2

as they were resolved to hold. I have not throughout this work chosen to enter into territorial disputes, because they convey very little private instruction, and do nothing at all towards the establishment of the public rights; yet it is dissicult to avoid remarking, that the line which the French have drawn in Nova Scotia, is not only not drawn by any treaty, but that it is very apparently calculated to secure them these parts of the province which they value most, and at the same time to pay an apparent respect to the treaty of Utrecht by leaving us some part of Acadia.

The chief town we had formerly in this province, was called Annapolis Royal; but though the capital, it was a small place, wretchedly fortified, and yet worse built and Here were stationed the remains of a regiment, which continued there very little recruited fince the reign of queen Anne; but though this place never flourished, it stood upon the very best harbour, as it is said, in North America; but it was not here, but on the South-East side of the peninsula, that the fettlement resolved and executed with so much spirit at the end of the last war, was esta-This too stands upon a fine harbour, very commodiously situated, and rather better than Annapolis for the fishery. The town is called Halifax from the present earl, to whose wisdom and care we owe this settlement.

1743,

to

m

 \mathbf{a}

W

an

CO

of

in

wi

ex

for

ev

CO

th

CO

ha

w

an

not into verv at all ghts: t the Nova reaty, ed to

which

o pay

ht by

n this ; but place. ilt and mains very Anne;

t stood aid, in but on hat the much s estarbour,

better own is whose

ht. In 1743,

1743, three thousand families, at an immense charge to the government, were transported into this country at once, and (I think) three regiments stationed there to protect them from the Indians, who have always shewed themfelves our most implacable enemies. town is large, and for so new a settlement well built. It has a good intrenchment of timber, strengthened with forts of the same materials, so as to be in little danger at least

from an Indian enemy.

Though this town of Halifax has, all things considered, a tolerable appearance, the adjacent country is not improved in proportion; the ground is very hard to be cleared; when cleared does not produce a great deal, and labour is extravagantly dear. colony has fuffered more from the incursions of the Indians than from any thing else. Their incursions have been so frequent, and attended with fuch cruelties, that the people can hardly extend themselves beyond the cannon of the fort, nor attend their works of agriculture even there without the greatest danger. The consequence of this is, that they do not raise the fifth part of what is sufficient to maintain Most of their provision of every fort comes from New England, and they must have starved if it were not for the fishery, which it must be owned is not contemptible, and for some little naval stores, and the pay

T 3

An ACCOUNT of the EUROPEAN of the garrison, the spending of which here is the principal use of the troops; against the Indian enemy they are of very little effect; though there are three regiments, and all the fighting men the Indians can raife in that province are not five hundred. The foldiers, inactive by their confinement in their barracks, diseased for the most part with the scurvy, and debilitated by the use of spirituous liquors, are quite an undermatch for the activity, vigilance, patience, and address of the American. A company of wood rangers kept constantly to fcour the country near our fettlements, and a small body of Indians who might be brought at an easy rate from the friendly tribes who inhabit our other fettlements, and encouraged by a reward for what scalps they should bring home, fent to infest the enemy amongst their own habitations, would have protected our colony, and long ago exterminated the Indians, or reduced them to an useful subjection, since unfortunately we have not the fecret of gaining their affections. The easy plan I have mentioned would not have had half the expence attending it, that the maintainance of a numerous and almost useless garrison has had. little experience will shew to the most ordinary understandings, what hardly any sagacity could have without it unveiled to the most penetrating statesman. It was a want of this experience that caused another mistake of almost

tl lo re tr tl

Cr Us ac

ar tio

th th Br th

m co a

are hu ftr

of bra

de: be here

the

ect:

the

pro-

, in-

icks,

arvy,

uors, vigi-

ican.

antly

, and

ought

who

raged

bring

their

l our

dians.

fince

lining

men-

bence

ume-

ordi-

gacity

most

f this

of al-

most

most as bad a nature. Until the beginning of this war a number of the ancient French colony, fome fay ten or twelve thousand souls. remained in the country, and were called and treated in a manner as a neutral people, though they ought to have been the king's subjects; but they yielded very little obedience to the crown of England, as in truth they had from us very little protection, and they were even accused of encouraging the Indian incursions, and fupplying them with arms and ammunition to annoy our people. Had we erected in their country a little fort, and in it kept a small garrison, to be maintained by that people themselves, appointed magistrates, and made them know the benefit and excellency of the British laws, and at the same time impressed them with a dread of the British power, we might have faved many useful people to this colony, and prevented the necessity (if it was a necessity) of using measures, which, if they are not impolitic, are certainly such as an humane and generous mind is never constrained to but with regret.

Besides Annapolis and Halisax, we have another settlement a little to the South-West of the latter, called Lunenburg. This is a branch of Germans from Halisax, who being discontented at the infertility of the soil there, desired to go where there was better land to be had, undertaking their own desence; ac-

T 4 cordingly

cordingly they settled where they desired, to the number of seven or eight hundred, and succeed tolerably well. Upon a tumult which arose amongst them, the governor sent a party of soldiers to protect them from their own discords, and from the enemy. This province is yet but in its beginning, and therefore, except in prospect, can afford us no great subject matter of speculation.

C H A P. XXVIII.

The island of Newfoundland. The fishery there.
The Bermudas. Their settlement and trade.
The Bahamas.

O the East of this province lies the great isle of Newfoundland, above three hundred miles long, and two hundred broad, extending quite up to New Britain, and forming the Eastern boundary of the gulf of St. Laurence. This island, after various disputes about the property, was entirely ceded to England by the treaty of Utrecht. From the foil of this island we were far from reaping any fudden or great advantage; for the cold is long continued and intense; and the summer heat, though violent, warms it not enough to produce any thing valuable; for the foil, at least in those parts of the island with which we are acquainted, (for we are far from knowing

d, to and which party own vince , exabject

there. trade.

great hun-, exrming of St. **fputes** ed to m the aping e cold fumhough e foil. which knowing

ing the whole) is rocky and barren. ever, it hath many large and fafe harbours; and several good rivers water it. This island, whenever the continent shall come to fail of timber convenient to navigation, (which perhaps is no very remote prospect) will afford a copious supply for masts, yards, and ail forts of lumber for the West-India trade. But what at present it is chiefly valuable for, is the great fishery of cod, which is carried on upon those shoals which are called the banks of Newfoundland. In that the French and Spaniards, especially the former, have a large share. Our share of this fishery is computed to increase the national stock by three hundred thousand a year, in gold and filver, remitted us for the cod we fell in the North, in Spain, Portugal, Italy and the Levant. The plenty of cod, both on the great bank and the leffer ones which lie to the East and South East of this island, is inconceivable; and not only cod, but several other species of fish are there in abundance; all these species are nearly in an equal plenty all along the shores of New England, Nova Scotia, and the isle of Cape Breton; and consequently excellent fisheries are carried on upon all their coasts. Where our American colonies are so ill peopled, or so barren as not to produce any thing from their foil, their coasts make us ample amends; and pour in upon us a wealth

An ACCOUNT of the EUROPEAN of another kind, and no way inferior to the

former, from their fisheries.

We have in North America, besides this, two clusters of islands: the Bermudas or Summer islands, at a vast distance from the continent in lat. 31. and the Bahama islands. The former were very early fettled, and were much celebrated in the time of the civil wars. when several of the cavalier party being obliged to retire into America, some of them, in particular Mr. Waller, the poet, fpent some time in this island. Waller was extremely enamoured with the ferenity of the air, and the beauty and richness of the vegetable productions of these islands; he celebrated them in a poem, which is fine but unequal, which he wrote upon this subject.

The Bermudas are but small: not containing in all upwards of twenty thousand acres. They are very difficult of access, being, as Waller expresses it, walled with rocks. What has been faid of the clearness and serenity of the air, and of the healthiness of the climate, was not exaggerated; but the foil could never boast of an extraordinary fertility. best production was cedar, which was superior to any thing of the kind in America. is still so, though diminished considerably in quantity, which has, as it is imagined, changed the air much for the worse; for now it is

much

ſe

he

er

th

T

ne fo

ite

ga

nc

of

of

th

an

th

be th

da

m th

Cu

th

an

much more inconstant than formerly; and several tender vegetables, which slourished here at the first settlement, being deprived of their shelter, and exposed to the bleak North-

erly winds, are feen no more.

the

this,

the

inds.

were

wars.

blig-

a, in

lome

v en-

d the

ucti-

in a

h he

itain-

cres.

g, as

What

ty of

mate,

never

Their

lupe-

ly in

ang-

it is

nuch

It

The chief, and indeed only business of these islanders, is the building and navigating light floops, and brigantines, built with their cedar, which they employ chiefly in the trade between North America and the West-Indies. These vessels are as remarkable for their swiftness, as the wood of which they are built is for its hard and durable quality. They export nothing from themselves but some white stone to the West-Indies, and some of their garden productions. To England they fend nothing. Formerly they made a good deal of money of a fort of hats for womens wear of the leaves of their palmetto's, which whilst the fashion lasted were elegant; but the trade and the fashion are gone together.

Their whites are computed to be about five thousand, the blacks which they breed are the best in America, and as useful as the whites in their navigation. The people of the Bermudas are poer, but healthy, contented, and remarkably chearful. It is extremely surprising that they do not set themselves heartily to the cultivation of vines in this island, to which their rocky soil seems admirably adapted; and their situation and the manner of trade

they

284 An ACCOUNT of the EUROPEAN they are already engaged in, would facilitate the distribution of their wine to every part of North America and the West-Indies.

The Bahamas are situated to the South of Carolina, from lat. 22 to 27, and they extend along the coast of Florida quite down to the Isle of Cuba; and are said to be sive hundred in number; some of them only mere rocks; but a great many others large, fertile, and in nothing differing from the soil of Carolina. All are however absolutely uninhabited, except Providence, which is neither the largest nor the most fertile.

This island was formerly a receptacle for the pirates, who for a long time infested the American navigation. This obliged the government to erect a fort there, to station an independent company in the island, and to send thither a governor. This island has at present not much trade, some oranges it sends to North America excepted. However, in time of war it makes considerably by the prizes condemned here, and in time of peace by the wrecks, which are frequent in this labyrinth of innumerable rocks and shelves.

This is all the benefit we derive from fo many large and fertile islands, situated in such a climate as will produce any thing, and which as it is never reached by any frosts, would yield in all probability even sugars, of as good a sort, and in as great abundance, as any islands

in

pı

SETTLEMENTS in AMERICA. in the West-Indies. Nothing more full fully shews the present want of that spirit of adventure and enterprize, which was fo common in the two last centuries, and which is of such infinite honour and advantage to any time or nation, than that these islands so situated can lie unoccupied, whilst we complain of the want of land proper for fugar, and whilst an hundred pounds an acre is sometimes paid for fuch in the Caribbees This point, to any who will be at the pains of studying the situation of these islands, and the consequences which may refult from the improvement or neglect of them, will appear of no small importance: and perhaps an enquiry into the causes of the strange degree of backwardness in which they are at present, may be a very prudent and perhaps a necessary measure.

ilitate

art of

ith of

xtend

o the

ndred

ocks;

olina.

except It nor

le for

ed the

e go-

on an

nd to has at

fends er, in

y the

peace

this

fuch

vhich

would

good Ilands

in

ves. om fo

CHAP. XXIX:

Hudson's Bay. Attempts for the discovery of a North-West passage. The Hudson's bay company. Thoughts upon its trade. Climate and soil of the countries there. Conclusion.

HE countries about Hudson's and Bassin's Bay make the last object of our speculation in America. The knowledge of these seas owing to a project for the discovery of a North-West passage to China.

So

So early as the year 1576 this noble defign was conceived; fince then it has been frequently dropped; it has often been revived; it is not yet compleated; but was never despaired of by those whose knowledge and spirit make them competent judges and lovers of such undertakings. Frobisher only discovered the main of New Britain, or Terra de Labrador, and those streights to which he has given his name. In 1585 John David sailed from Dartmouth, and viewed that and the more Northerly coasts; but he seems never to

have entered the bay.

Hudson made three voyages on the same adventure, the first in 1607, the second in 1608, and his third and last in 1610. bold and judicious navigator entered the streights that led into this new Mediterranean, coasted a great part of it, and penetrated to eighty degrees twenty-three minutes into the heart of the frozen zone. His ardor for the discovery, not abated by the difficulties he struggled with in this empire of winter, and world of frost and snow, he staid here until the enfuing fpring, and prepared in the beginning of 1611 to pursue his discoveries; but his crew, who suffered equal hardships, without the same spirit of support them, mutinied, seized upon him and seven of those who were most faithful to him, and committed them to the fury of the seas in an open

287

open boat. Hudson and his companions were either swallowed up by the waves, or gaining the inhospitable coast which they water, were destroyed by the savages; but his sate so calamitous cannot so much discourage a generous mind from such undertakings, as the immortality of his name, which he has secured by having given it to so great at a sea, will be a spur to others to expect an equal homour, and perhaps with better success.

From the first voyage of Frobisher an hundred and ten years ago, to that of captain Ellis, notwithstanding so many disappointments, the rational hopes of this grand discovery have grown greater by every attempt, and seem to spring even out of our very failures. The greater swell of the tides in the inner part of the bay than near the streights, an appearance so unknown in any other inland seas, and the increase of this swell with Westerly winds, seems without any other arguments to evince the certain existence of such a passage as we have so long sought without success.

But though we have hitherto failed in the original purpose for which we navigated this bay, yet such great designs even in their failures bestow a sufficient reward for whatever has been expended upon them. In 1670 the charter was granted to a company for the exclusive trade to this bay, and they

have

defign n frevived; er dee and

lovers discoerra de he has

failed nd the ever to

e fame

This ed the ranean, ated to the for the

ties he r, and e until

he beveries; dships,

n, muthose

l comin an open

have acted under it ever fince with great benefit to the private men who compose the company, though comparatively with little advantage to Great Britain. It is true that their trade in beavers and other species of furs is not inconfiderable, and it is a trade in itself of the best kind; its object enters largely into our manufactures, and carries nothing but our manufactures from us to procure it; and thus it has the qualities of the most advantageous kinds of traffic. The company has besides pretty large returns in beaver and deer skins. It is faid that the dividends of this company are prodigious; far exceeding what is gained in any of the other great trading bodies; yet their capital is small, they seem little inclined to enlarge their bottom, and appear strongly possessed with that spirit of jealousy that prevails in some degree in all knots and societies of men endued with peculiar privileges. The officers of the company have behaved to those who wintered within their jurisdiction in fearch of the North-West passage (one of the purposes for which the company itself was originally instituted) in such a manner as to give us the truest idea of this spirit. If I had been fingular in this opinion, I should have expressed my sentiments with much greater diffidence; but this abuse has been often and loudly complained of. It would appear aftonishing that this trade has not hitherto been laid

must not necessarily pass unredressed.

The vast countries which furround this Bay all abound with animals, whose fur is excellent, and fome of kinds which are not vet brought into commerce; and the company is very far from any attempt to stretch this trade to its full extent. If the trade were laid open, it feems of necessity that three capital advantages would ensue: first, that the trade going into a number of rival hands, with a more moderate profit to individuals, it would confume a much greater quantity of our manufactures, employ more of our shipping and feamen, and of course bring home more furs, and by lowering the price of that commodity at home, increase the demand of those manufactures into which they enter at the foreign markets; it might bring home other species of furs than those we deal in at present, and thus open new channels of trade, which in commerce is a matter of great confideration. Secondly, this more general intercourse would make the country better known; it would habituate great numbers of our people to it; it would discover the most tolerable parts for a fettlement; and thus, instead of a miserable fort or two, time might shew an' English colony at Hudson's Bay, which would open the fur trade yet more fully, and increase the vent of our mannfactures yet further. Thirdly, Vol. II. this

be# the little

that furs itself into t our

thus zeous efides Ikins. pany

ained ; yet clined ongly

t precieties The

those on in of the f was

as to I had l have

reater n and asto-

been laid

this more general trade on the Bay would naturally, without any new expence or trouble whatsoever, in a very short space of time discover to us the so much desired North-West passage, or shew us clearly and definitively that we ought to expect no such thing. These advantages, and even yet more considerable ones, would be derived from laying open this trade under such proper regulations, which the nature of the object would point out of itself.

No colony has been hitherto attempted at Hudson's Bay. The company has two inconfiderable forts there. The country is every where barren; to the Northward of the bay even the hardy pine tree is feen no longer, and the cold womb of the earth is incapable of any better production than some miserable The winter reigns with an inconceiveable rigour for near nine months of the year; the other three are violently hot, except when the North-West wind renews the memory of the winter. Every kind of European feed, which we have committed to the earth in this inhospitable climate, has hitherto perished; but in all probability we have not tried the feed of corn from the Northern parts of Sweden and Norway; in fuch cases the place from whence the seed comes is of great moment. All this feverity and long continuance of winter, and the barrenness of the earth, which arises from thence, is experienced,

291

tienced, in the latitude of 51; in the temperate latitude of Cambridge. However, it is far from increasing uniformly as you go Northwards. Captain James wintered in Charlton island, in latitude 51; he judged that the climate here was to be deemed utterly uninhabitable on account of the surprising hardships which he suffered; yet the company has a fort several degrees more to the Northward, where their servants make a shift to subsist tolerably. It is called Fort Nelson, and is in

the latitude 54.

All the animals of these countries are cloathed with a close, fost, warm fur. In summer there is here, as in other places, a variety in the colours of the feveral animals; when that is over they all assume the livery of winter, and every fort of beafts, and most of their fowls, are of the colour of the snow, every thing animate and inenimate is white. This is a surprising phenomenon. But what is yet more furprising, and what is indeed one of these striking things that draw the most inattentive to an admiration of the wisdom and goodness of Providence, is, that the dogs and cats from England, that have been carried into Hudson's Bay, on the approach of winter have intirely changed their appearance, and acquired a much longer, fofter, and thicker coat of hair than they had originally. As for the men of the country, Providence there, as every where else, has given them no provi-

U 2

fion

ted at vo inevery ne bay onger, apable **ferable** inconof the ot, exws the of Euitted to has hiity we e Norn fuch comes d long ness of s expeienced,

d na-

ouble e dif-

West tively

Γhefe

erable

n this

out of

fion but their own art and ingenuity, and they shew a great deal in their manner of kindling a fire, in cloathing themselves, and in preserving their eyes from the ill effects of that glaring white that every where surrounds them for the greatest part of the year; in other respects they are very savage. In their shapes and saces, they do not resemble the Americans who live to the Southward; they are much more like the Laplanders and Samoeids of Europe, from whom they are probably de-

The other Americans feem to be of

a Tartar original.

fcended.

I have now finished upon my plan the survey of the English colonies in America. I flatter myself that so full an idea has not been given of them before in fo narrow a compass. this the reader will himfelf be enabled to judge, for it is not my defign to preoccupy his judgment in these particulars, how our colonies have grown, what their vegetative principle has been, in what vigour it subsists, or what signs of corruption appear in any of them; how far we have purfued the advantages which our fituation, and the nature of the country have given us; or where we have purfued them, whether we have gone to the ultimate point. He will see how far the colonies have served the trade of the mother country, and how much the mother country has done or neglected to do towards their happiness and prosperity. Certainly our colonies deserve, and

and would fully reward an attention of a very different kind from any that has ever yet been given to them. Even as they are circumstanced, I do not in the least hesitate to say that we derive more advantage, and of a better kind, from our colonies, than the Spaniards and Portuguese have from theirs, abounding as they are with gold and filver and precious stones; although in ours there is no appearance at all of fuch dazzling and delufive wealth. But then I conceive it might be made very clear, that had they yielded us these splendid medals in lieu of what they now produce, the effect would be far less to our advantage. Our present intercourse with them is an emulation in industry; they have nothing that does not arise from theirs, and what we receive enters into our manufactures, excites our industry, and increases our commerce; whereas gold is the measure or account, but not the means of trade. is found in nations as it is in the fortunes of private men, that what does not arise from labour, but is acquired by other means, is never lasting. Such acquisitions extinguish industry, which is alone the parent of any folid riches.

The barbarism of our ancestors could not comprehend how a nation could grow more populous by sending out a part of its people. We have lived to see this paradox made out

 \mathbf{U}_{3}

by

mate have, and ne or and erve, and

and

· of

and

ts of

ther

apes

ieri-

are

eids

de-

rvey

atter

riven

idge,

udg-

onies

ciple

what

em:

hich

intry

fued

By

by experience, but we have not sufficiently profited of this experience; fince we begin, some of us at least, to think that there is a danger of dispeopling ourselves by encouraging new colonies, or increasing the old. our colonies find, as hitherto they have constantly done, employment for a great number of hands, there is no danger but that hands will be found for the employment. That a rich, trading and manufacturing nation should be long in want of people, is a most absurd supposition; for besides that the people within themselves multiply the most where the means of subfishence are most certain, it is as natural for people to flock into a busy and wealthy country, that by any accident may be thin of people, as it is for the dense air to rush into those parts where it is rarified. He must be a great stranger to this country, who does not observe in it a vast number of people, whose removal from hence, if they could be of any use elsewhere, would prove of very little detriment to the public.

I have already observed, that the trade of our colonies deserves a more particular attention than any other, not only on account of the advantages I have just mentioned, but because our attention is sure of being sufficiently rewarded. The object is in our own power; it is of a good kind; and of such extent and variety, as to employ nobly the most inven-

tive

ntly gin, is a rag-If conands at a bluc furd thin eans ural lthy n of into t be not rofe any dee of

tent of bently er; and entive

tive genius in those matters. Foreign politics have fomething more splendid and entertaining than domestic prudence; but this latter is ever attended, though with less glaring, yet with infinitely more folid, secure, and lasting advantages. The great point of our regard in America, ought therefore to be the effectual peopling, employment, and strength of our possessions there; in a subordinate degree the management of our interests with regard to the French and Spaniards. The latter we have reason to respect, to indulge, and even perhaps to endure; and more, it is probable, may be had from them in that way, than by the violent methods which some have so warmly recommended, and still urge, tho' we have had fome experience to convince us of their insufficiency. But the nature of the French, their situation, their designs, every thing has shewn that we ought to use every method to repress them, to prevent them from extending their territories, their trade, or their influence, and above all to connive at not the least encroachment; but this in such a manner as not to strain our own strength, or turn our eyes from ferving ourselves by attempts to distress them. But as we are now in the midst of a war, until that is decided, it will be impossible to fay any thing satisfactory on our connections with French America, until we fee U 4

296 An ACCOUNT of the EUROPEAN fee what the next treaty of peace will do in the distribution of the territory of the two nations there.

CHAP. XXX.

The royal, proprietary, and charter governments. Laws of the colonies. Paper currency. Abuses in it. Another sort of money proposed.

THE settlement of our colonies was never purfued upon any regular plan; but they were formed, grew, and flourished, as accidents, the nature of the climate, or the dispositions of private men happened to operate. We ought not therefore to be surprised to find in the feveral constitutions and governments of our colonies, so little of any thing like uniformity. It has been faid that there is fcarce any form of government known, that does not prevail in some of our plantations; the variety is certainly great and vicious; but the latitude of the observation must be somewhat restrained; for some forms they are certainly strangers to. To pass over several, nothing like a pure hereditary aristocracy has ever appeared in any of them.

The first colony which we settled, was that of Virginia. It was governed for some time by a president and a council, appointed by the

crown;

When

, d

in

rnper of

vas
an;
ed,
the
pefed
rning
e is
hat

out neering

nat ne he

crown; but when the people were increased to a confiderable body, it was not thought reasonable to leave them longer under a mode of government so averse from that which they had enjoyed at home. They were therefore empowered to elect representatives for the feveral counties into which this province is divided, with privileges resembling those of the representatives of the commons in England. The persons so elected form what is called the lower house of affembly. This was added to the council which still subsisted, and the members of which were, and to this day are nominated by the crown, as at the first, and they are not only nominated by the crown but hold their feats during the king's pleasure, as signified by his governor. They are stiled honourable, and are chosen from the persons of the best fortunes and most considerable influence in the country. They form another branch of the legislature, and are sometimes called the upper house of affembly. They answer in some measure to the house of peers in our constitu-As the lower house of assembly is the guardian of the people's privileges, the council is appointed chiefly to preserve the prerogative of the crown, and to fecure the dependence of the colony; it is the more effectually to answer these ends, that the members of the council are only appointed during pleasure.

208 An ACCOUNT of the EUROPEAN

When any bill has passed the two houses, it comes before the governor, who represents the king, and gives his affent or negative, as he thinks proper. It now acquires the force of a law, but it must be afterwards transmited to the king and council in England, where it may still receive a negative that takes away all its effect. The upper house of assembly not only forms a part of the legislature of the colony, but it acts as a privy council to the governor, without whose concurrence, he can do nothing of moment; it sometimes acts as a court of chancery. This is the common form of government, and the best too that is in use in the plantations. This is the manner of government in all the islands of the West-Indies; in Nova Scotia; in one province of New England, and with some restriction, in another; in New York, New Jersey, Virginia, the two Carolinas, and Georgia. This form is commonly called a royal government.

The second form in use in our settlements in America is called a proprietary government. At our first planting that part of the world, it was not difficult for a person who had interest at court, to obtain large tracts of land, not inferior in extent to many kingdoms; and to be invested with a power very little less than regal over them; to govern by what laws, and to form what fort of constitution he pleased. A dependence upon the crown of

England

les, it fents e, as force fmithere away mbly f the o the e can cts as nmon hat is manf the vince ction. erfey, This ment. ments vernof the who acts of loms; little what on he wn of

gland

SETTLEMENTS in AMERICA. England was shewn only by the payment of an Indian arrow, a few skins, or some other trifling acknowledgment of the same nature. We had formely many more governments of that fort, than we have at present; in the West-Indies, the island of Barbadoes was granted to the earl of Carlifle; and we have feen a like grant made of the island of St. Lucia to the duke of Montague in this age, which after an infinite charge to that benevolent nobleman came to nothing, by a fort of tacit allowance of the French claim to it. This was in 1722, when our connection with France hindered us from exerting our rights with the necessary vigour. Carolina was formerly a government of this kind, but it was lodged in eight proprietaries. How they parted with their rights we have feen already. New Jersey was likewise a proprietary government; but this too failed like the others. The only governments in this form which remain at prefent, but confiderably abridged of their privileges, are Penfylvania and Mary-In the latter the constitution exactly refembles that of the royal governments; a governor, council, and affembly of the reprefentatives of the people; but the governor is appointed by the proprietary, and approved by the crown. The customs are reserved to the crown likewise; and the officers belonging to them are independent of the government of the the province. In Pensylvania the proprietary is under the same restrictions that limit the proprietary of Maryland, on the side of the crown; on the side of the people, he is yet more restrained; for their legislature has but two parts, the assembly of the people and the governor; so that the governor wanting the great influence which the council gives in other places, whenever his sentiments differ from those of the assembly, he is engaged in a

very unequal contest.

The third form is called a charter government; this originally prevailed in all the provinces of New England; and still remains in two of them, Connecticut and Rhode Island. By the charters to these colonies, the exorbitant power which was given in the proprietary governments to fingle men, was here vested, and I apprehend much more dangerously, in the whole body of the people. It is to all purposes a mere democracy. They elect every one of their own officers, from the highest to the lowest; they displace them at pleasure; and the laws which they enact, are valid without the royal approbation. This state of unbounded freedom, I believe, contributed in some degree to make those settlements flourish; but it certainly contributed as much to render their value to their mother country far more precarious, than a better digested plan would have done that might have taken in the interests

etary
t the
f the
is yet
s but
d the
g the
es in
differ
l in a

proins in fland. orbirietavestoufly, to all every gheit fure; valid ate of ed in rish: ender more vould e in-

erests

SETTLEMENTS in AMERICA. terests both of Great Britain and of the new The truth is, nothing of an ensettlement. larged and legislative spirit appears in the planning of our colonies; the charter governments were evidently copied from some of our corporations at home, which if they are good inftitutions themselves, yet are by no means fit to be imitated by a new people goinginto a remote country, far from the eye and hand of the supreme power. What may be an useful institution for an inferior member of fome great body, and closely united to it, may be not at all proper for a new settlement, which is to form a fort of dependent commonwealth in a remote part of the world. Here the ends to be answered, are to make the new estabishment as useful as possible to the trade of the mother country; to secure its dependence; to provide for the ease, safety, and happiness of the settlers; to protect them from their enemies, and to make an easy and effectual provision to preserve them from the tyranny and avarice of their governors, or the ill consequences of their own licentiousness; that they should not, by growing into an unbounded liberty, forget that they were subjects, or lying under a base servitude have no reason to think themselves British subjects. This is all that colonies, according to the present and best ideas of them, can or ought to be. The charter governments go2 An Account of the European ments had nothing of this in view, and confequently provided for it but very indifferently.

The province of Massachusets Bay, which is partly a government of this popular kind, but tempered with something more of the royal authority, seems to be on still a worse footing, through the one error of having no established provision for the governor; this one mischief is productive of a thousand others, because the governor in a manner is obliged to

because the governor in a manner is obliged to keep intrigues and devices on foot, to reconcile the various parts which he must act, and is necessitated to govern by faction and cabal. Hence it is that the charges of this one government are greater than those not only of the other provinces of New England taken togesther, but of those of Pensylvania and New York added to them; they are deeply in debt, they are every day plunging deeper, their

It has been an old complaint, that it is not easy to bring American governors to justice for mismanagements in their province, or to make them refund to the injured people the wealth raised by their extortions. Against such governors at present there are three kinds of remedy; the privy council, the king's bench, and the parliament. The council onjust cause of complaint may remove the governor; the power of the council seems to extend no fur-

taxes increase, and their trade declines.

ther.

condiffewhich kind. f the worle ng no this thers. ged to oncile and is cabal. vernof the toge-New

is not ce for make vealth fuch ds of ench. use of the b further.

debt, their ther. The king's bench may punish the governors for their offences committed in America, as if done in England. The power of parliament is unlimited in the ways of enquiry into the crime, or of punishing it. of these remedies can never be sufficient to terrify a governor grown rich by iniquity, and willing to retire quietly, though dishonourably, to enjoy the fruits of it. The king's bench, or any other merely law court, feems equally insufficient for this purpose, because offences in government, though very grievous, can hardly ever be fo accurately defined as to be a proper object of any court of justice, bound up by forms and the rigid letter of the law. The parliament is equal to everything; but whether party, and other bars to a quick and effectual proceeding may not here leave the provinces as much unredressed as in the other courts, I shall not take upon me to determine.

The law in all our provinces, besides those acts which from time to time they have made for themselves, is the common law of England, the old statute law, and a great part of the new, which in looking over their laws I find many of our fettlements have adopted, with very little choice or discretion. And indeed the laws of England, if in the long period of their duration they have had many improvements, fo they have grown more tedious, perplexed, and intricate, by the heaping up many

abuses

An ACCOUNT of the EUROPEAN abuses in one age, and the attempts to remove them in another. These infant settlements furely demanded a more fimple, clear, and determinate legislation, though it were of somewhat an homelier kind; laws fuited to the time, to their country, and the nature of their new way of life. Many things still subsist in the law of England, which are built upon causes and reasons that have long ago ceased; many things are in those laws suitable to England only. But the whole weight of this ill-agreeing mass, which neither we nor our fathers were well able to bear, is laid upon the shoulders of these colonies, by which a spirit of contention is raifed, and arms offensive and defensive supplied to keep up and exercise this spirit, by the intricacy and unfuitableness of the laws to their object. And thus in many of our fettlements the lawyers have gathered to themselves the greatest part of the wealth of the country; men of less use in such establishments than in more fettled countries, where the number of people naturally fets many apart from the occupations of husbandry, arts, or commerce. Certainly our American brethren might well have carried with them the privileges which make the glory and happiness of Englishmen, without taking them encumbered with all that load of matter, perhaps so useless at home, without doubt fo extremely prejudicial in the colonies. Laws themselves are hardly more the ce-

ment

юvс ents demethe heir i the auses nany land eing were lders itennsive t, by ws to ettleelves ntry; an in er of bccu-Cerhave make withload hout nies. e ce-

merit

SETTLEMENTS in AMERICA. ment of focieties than money; and focieties flourish or decay according to the condition of either of these. It may be easily judged, that as the ballance of trade with Great Britain is very much against the colonies, that therefore whatever gold or filver they may receive from the other branches of their commerce, makes but a short stay in America. This consideration at first view would lead one to conclude, that in a little time money for their ordinary circulation would be wanting; and this is apparently confirmed by experience. Very little money is feen amongst them, notwithstanding the vast increase of their trade. This deficiency is supplied, or more properly speaking, it is caused by the use of money of credit, which they commonly call paper currency. This money is not created for the conveniency of traffic, but by the exigencies of the government, and often by the frauds and artifices of private men for their particular profit. Before this invention money was indeed scarce enough in America, but they raised its value, and it ferved their purpose tolerably. I shall forbear entering into the causes that increased the charges of government fo greatly in all our American provinces. But the execution of projects too vast for their strength, made large sums necessary. The feeble state of a colony which had hardly taken root in the country, could not bear them; and to raise sudden and heavy Vol. II. Х

206 An ACCOUNT of the EUROPEAN taxes, would destroy the province without anfwering their purpose. Credit then came in aid of money, and the government issued bills to the amount of what they wanted, to pass current in all payments; and they commonly laid a tax, or found fome perfons willing to engage their lands as fecurity for the gradual finking this debt, and calling in these bills. But before the time arrived at which these taxes were to answer their end, new exigencies made new emissions of paper currency necesfary; and thus things went from debt to debt, until it became very visible that no taxes which could be imposed could discharge them; and that the land fecurities given were often fraudulent, and almost always insufficient. Then the paper currency became no longer to he weighed against the credit of the government, which depended upon its visible revenue. It was compared to the trade, to which it was found fo disproportionate, that the bills fell ten, twenty, fifty, and eighty per cent in some places. It was to no purpose that the government used every method to keep up their credit, and even to compel the receiving these bills at the value for which they were emitted, and to give no preference over them to gold and filver; they were more and more depreciated every day; whilst the government every day emitted more paper, and grew less sollicitous about their old bills, being entirely SETTLEMENTS in AMERICA. 307 entirely exhausted to find means of giving credit to the new.

ıt anme in

t bills

pass nonly

ng to

adual: bills.

thefe

encies

debt.

taxes hom;

often

cient.

ger to

vern-

e re-

le, to , tha**t**

ty per

e that keep

e re-

they

over

e and

being tirely

go-, and

It is easy to perceive how much the intercourse of business must suffer by this uncertainty in the value of money, when a man receives that in payment this day for tenshillings, which to-morrow he will not find received from him for five, or perhaps for three. Real money can hardly ever multiply too much in any country, because it will always as it increases be the certain sign of the increase of trade, of which it is the measure, and consequently of the foundness and vigour of the whole body. But this paper money may, and does increase, without any increase of trade, nay often when it greatly declines; for it is not the measure of the trade of the nation, but of the necessity of its government; and it is abfurd, and must be ruinous, that the fame cause which naturally exhausts the wealth of a nation, should likewise be the only productive cause of money.

The currency of our plantations must not be set upon a level with the sunds in England. For besides that the currency carries no interest to make some amends for the badness of the security; the security itself is so rotten, that no art can give it any lasting credit; as there are parts of New England wherein, if the whole stock and the people along with it were sold, they would not bring money enough

308 An ACCOUNT of the EUROPEAN, &c. to take in all the bills which have been emitted.

I hope it is not too late to contrive some remedy for this evil, as those at the head of affairs here are undoubtedly very sollicitous about so material a grievance. I should imagine that one current coin for the whole continent might be struck here, or there, with such an allay as might at once leave it of some real value, and yet so debased as to prevent its currency elsewhere, and so to keep it within themselves. This expedient has been practised, and with success, in several parts of Europe; but particularly in Holland, a country which undoubtedly is perfectly acquainted with its commercial interest.

පිc. emit-

fome and of citous imaconwith fome revent sep it is been arts of counainted

